

GOD'S WORK

BY

ART MOKAROW

God's Work

Evanow Publishers
P. O. Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

Copyright MMV

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in the United States of America.

Written by Art Mocarow

PREFACE

Jesus said in John 6:29, **“This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.”** God’s Work is to believe everything that Christ said and did. That is God’s Work. In Matthew 18:11, Jesus also said He came to restore what was lost. What was lost was The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life or Salvation. This book covers that Work of God as fulfilled by His Son Jesus, The Christ. The Bible starts in The Garden and ends in The Garden or Paradise. May you be blessed by God’s perfect work in building God’s family in The Kingdom of God. Each chapter covers a specific Spiritual Lesson on how God, “in Christ,” makes you Holy like Him.

It’s appropriate to thank my secretary, Kathy Fowler for endlessly retyping this manuscript. Thanks to my wife who tried to find a simpler way with words; while capitalizing important Biblical words and meanings, so new Bible readers never skip over them. Then, a special thanks to Gary Arvidson who has fine tuned “my explanations” with his own extensive background in The Bible.

Albert Einstein once said “I want to know God’s thoughts....the rest are details.” This has been my ultimate goal in writing “God’s Puzzle Solved” and in this second book “God’s Work.” No monies are accepted for this work. Your Spiritual Reward is our reward. Any critique, improvements, questions or comments are gratefully accepted.

Art Mokarow
P. O. Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

art@themerchantnet.com
(For Bible questions)
www.godspuzzlesolved.com
(Free Download)

God's Work

CONTENTS

	Preface	
1	Word of God	1
2	God's Glory	22
3	Purpose of God's Temple	38
4	God's Judgment	51
5	What is The Church?	63
6	What is The Ministry?	75
7	Financing God's Work	110
8	Why The Priesthood Receives Tithes	132
9	What or Who Was Melchisedec?	145
10	Can Christians Lose Their Salvation?	174
11	Real Repentance	193
12	Why Christianity Can't be a Religion	231
13	Is The Law Done Away?	247
14	The Law Is Spiritual	263
15	How Faith Saves	284
16	Sabbath Is A Sign	300
17	Holy Days – A Shadow	321
18	Riches of God's Grace	350
19	Every Man In His Order	368
20	A Spiritual Resurrection Only?	397
21	God – All In All	415
22	Satan Shall Bruise His Heel	438
23	The Great Falling Away	452
24	Why The Book of Revelation?	463

CHAPTER 1

WORD OF GOD

The primary responsibility of ministers is to preach The Gospel about The Kingdom of God (Mark 1:14), as Christ did. But, is the preaching about God's Kingdom the same as God's Work? Or, is The Kingdom message, The Good News, about the goal of God's Work? Could it be that the achievement of God's Kingdom is really the effort of God completing His Work? Does The Bible tell you what The Work of God is? What kind of Work is God busy doing, now, in this human age?

JESUS GIVES YOU THE ANSWER!

After Christ fed the five thousand people with five barley loaves and two fishes, there were twelve baskets of bread left over. Everyone had more than enough. Later that evening, Jesus departed on a boat with His disciples. When Christ returned to The City of Capernaum, the people who had been fed, rushed up to Him.

John 6:27-28 ²⁷Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which endureth unto

everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. ²⁸Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

Christ had just said to them: **“²⁷Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which endureth unto everlasting life”** (John 6:27). Then the people asked Jesus what must be done to do The Work of God (John 6:27-28). This was a very simple, clear question they asked of Christ. Jesus, from His own lips, gives you The Biblical answer defining The Work of God. Biblically, no other answer is True, except what The Son of God tells you. Nothing else is The Work of God.

John 6:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

Jesus answered them with these words: **“²⁹...the work of God, [is] that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.”**

Christ said that The Work of God is To Believe on Him (Christ). Only through Jesus can you receive everlasting Life. Only Christ tells you the exact Path you must follow – which is The Work of God. The entire reason He fed the five thousand with twelve loaves and two fishes, was to show you that Christ is “that bread.” Christ performed this miracle to reveal God's Work to you.

I Timothy 2:4 Who will have all men to be saved, and

to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

I Timothy 2:4 states that it is God's Will that every human being would be Saved, and that His Will was first performed, by His Son, Jesus (John 5:30-36). How does God, through His Son, Save everyone? You can be Saved by believing on His Son, Jesus Christ. How can this be God's Work if Christ is The One doing The Work? That is the critical question.

WORD OF GOD

Deuteronomy 21:17 concerns The Law that God gave to explain The Purpose of The Firstborn. In Romans 8:29, Paul said that Christ is The Firstborn Son of God, and that all the rest of mankind are destined to become Sons of God.

Deuteronomy 21:17 But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated [wife] for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his.

By God's Law of The Firstborn, Christ received a double portion from His Father (which was The Father's strength) to do God's Work (John 5:17, John 3:34). Jesus was the only One who spoke The Words of God by The Power of The Holy Spirit from God, which was given to Him without measure (actually a double portion).

Jesus said that The Work of God is to believe on Him whom God hath

sent. So, Jesus speaks only The Words of God, which will give you Eternal Life. This simply means that you must believe in Christ because He speaks God's Word. God's Word gives Everlasting Life, which is The Work that Christ does. Then, what is The Word of God?

RELIGION AND THE WORD OF GOD

Many Christian religions believe The Word of God is another "being" besides God. In fact, some religions believe God's Holy Spirit is also another "being." Therefore, they present The Word of God as a being, and The Holy Spirit as a being. They have three Gods. Is this Biblical?

Others believe that The Holy Spirit is not another God, but The Power of God. They think, in the beginning, only Christ was another being with God. Now you have two Gods, which are God, The Father, and The Word of God. Just how many Gods are there? Let The Bible tell you.

**I Timothy 2:5 For there is one God, and one mediator
between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;**

I Timothy 2:5 plainly states that there is only one God. Christ, as The Word of God, is just a Mediator between God and humanity. That is what The Bible presents to you.

Since Christ was given The Holy Spirit at birth (the same Holy Spirit made Mary pregnant), The Holy Spirit couldn't be another "being" because Jesus would then be The Son of The Holy Spirit and not The Son of God, The Father. In Luke 1:35, The Angel answered Mary, and

presented The Holy Spirit as being a Power, and not a separate individual being who came from God, The Father.

John 14:17 Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

The Bible states that Jesus is The Son of God; therefore, The Holy Spirit couldn't have been another "being." The Holy Spirit is "A Power" – "A Holy Power" – which comes from God. It leads everyone to The Truth. John 14:17 states that God's Spirit dwells in you and reveals God's Truth. Therefore, God's Holy Spirit is "A Power" from God, which reveals God's Truth to you (John 17:17). The Holy Spirit cannot be another "being," but is the very Power from God Himself.

John 17:17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

What was The Word of God before Christ became The Word of God? Was Christ another "being" just like God? Only The Scriptures can reveal this Truth to you.

Before you study one of the critical Scriptures, which describes The Word of God, it is pertinent that you approach these verses as a little child. Remember, Christ said that you will not enter into God's Kingdom unless you become as a little child. You cannot have pre-set ideas, opinions or

assumptions. No human interpretations are allowed – Only Biblical facts and proof.

John 1:1-15 ¹In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ²The same was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. ⁴In him was life; and the life was the light of men. ⁵And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. ⁶There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. ⁷The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe. ⁸He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. ⁹That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. ¹⁰He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. ¹¹He came unto his own, and his own received him not. ¹²But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: ¹³Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. ¹⁴And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth. ¹⁵John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He

that cometh after me is preferred before me: for he was before me.

The Apostle John states, **“¹In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”** What do you know about The Word at this point? This verse reveals The Word was from the beginning; and this Word was also with God, but this Word was also, God. It does not say this Word was another “being.” Since God is One (I Timothy 2:5), the best notion that anyone can state about this Word, is that it is an Element of God Himself. This is what The Bible tells you.

“³All things were made by him;...” All things were created by God, for that is what The Word has performed. This Element of God, The Word, has The Power to create. This Word has within it The Power to produce Life. Consequently, The Word of God can be defined as the very Words from God, The Father. This Word was put into Christ at His Birth (Deuteronomy 18:18).

John, The Baptist, states that he **“⁸...was sent to bear witness of that Light.”** John goes on and tells you that he, himself, is not that “light,” but rather, that “Light” was sent from God (The Word), which was the “Light.”

So, The Word of God was in the beginning. The Word also created everything, had The Power to give Life, and was The Light (Truth) of The World. Above all, The Word was God – not another being. Up to this

point, this is all that anyone knows about The Word. No two beings – just One God. In summary, The Word of God:

1. Created all things;
2. Gives Life
3. Is The Light of The World revealing God's Truth.

This is all that The Bible states about The Word of God, with no second “being.” Also, realize that The Word is God's Word. Therefore, The Word of God has to be an Entity of God Himself, and not another “being.”

Read Genesis 1:1-2. It is God, by His Word, who created all things. God's very Words had the power to create the entire universe. Clearly, at this time, God, not Jesus, created all things, The Almighty God Himself. God did it by His very Word.

When Jesus, at His physical birth had God's very Word put in Him, then Christ, as The Word, created all things. Once Jesus, at His birth, had God, our Father's Word in Him, Christ then became God's Word or The Logos. By becoming God's Word, Jesus was, therefore, the one who created all things because He, now, at His birth, became the very Word of God which created everything.

This Light or The Word “⁹...**lighteth every man that cometh into the world**” (showing Salvation for everyone). Those who received The Word will become The Sons of God. “¹⁴**And the Word [Greek, “logos”] was made flesh, and dwelt among us.**” This Word, which became flesh (a human being), had The Glory of God, The Father. Verse 14 defines what The Word of God is. The Word of God was God's Glory, and not another

being. God's Glory, which was The Word, was of God, The Father. The Word of God was not Christ as another "being," and not a God before that Word was made flesh. The Bible plainly states that The Word of God was The Glory of God, Himself. When checking the original Greek word for "logos," in Strong's Concordance #3056, the meaning includes the notion of: "the thought," "reasoning," "the mental faculty," and "the divine expression." Therefore, God's Glory as The Logos is God's thought and divine expression by The Power of God's Holy Spirit.

John 17:5-10 ⁵And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. ⁶I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. ⁷Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. ⁸For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. ⁹I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. ¹⁰And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

Jesus explains what this Glory is in John 17:5-10. Christ asked God to give Him The Glory He had with God in the beginning. What was this Glory (The Word of God)? Verse 5 states that this Glory was from The

Father Himself, not from another “being.” This Glory that Jesus had from the beginning was The Word of God that was given to Christ at His birth (John 3:34). Christ became The Word of God at His Birth by The Holy Spirit. In fact, this Glory (God's Thought or God's Message), which is from God, The Father, will, also, be in you, through Christ (John 17:10). Christ was The Rock that followed Israel because, before Jesus' Birth, The Word of God, God's Glory, was The Rock, which was to become Christ (I Corinthians 10:4). In the Hebrew, it is called “The Shekinah,” or “God's very Presence” which includes “God's Word” and “His Thoughts.”

GOD'S GLORY

In John 6:29, Jesus was asked the question about what is God's Work? Jesus answered and said unto them, “²⁹**This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he [God] hath sent.**” God had sent Christ to do The Father's Work. Christ was not sent by another God “being” to do God's Work. God Himself sent Christ to do His Work. This was God's Glory, which is The Word of God. How was this done?

Deuteronomy 21:17 But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his.

“¹⁷**But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated [Wife] for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath [God has]**

for he is the beginning of his [God's] strength; the right of the firstborn is his.”

Since Jesus is The Firstborn Son of God, The Law of Moses states that The Firstborn is to inherit a double portion of God's Strength, or God's Glory (which was The Word of God, and which was God). God gave a double portion of His Strength to Christ, so He could do The Father's Work. Christ, before He was human, was in God's Thoughts or Word, which became Jesus at His Birth. God's Word was in Christ at His Birth, and Christ, therefore, became The Son of God. Since Jesus became, The Word, The Logos, at birth, Christ, therefore, created all things, since He now was God's Devine Words and very Thoughts.

John, The Baptist explains what The Word of God is, and how Christ received The Firstborn's Inheritance.

John 3:34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

Notice, Christ at His physical birth, received the Father's Words, not His own words as pre-existing. John said that Christ only spoke God's Word, and had received a double measure of God's Spirit. That is how Christ inherited the double portion from His Father. God's Holy Spirit was given to Christ at His Inception. God's Holy Spirit caused Mary to become pregnant through God's Spirit. God's Holy Spirit gave The Word to Jesus; therefore, He could speak God's Words. The Word of God as

defined by "The Scriptures" represents God's Personal Words from The Father's Mind (God's Thoughts – Psalms 40:5) concerning what wonderful things God is doing through His Son – who now is The Word of God.

CHRIST AND THE FATHER'S WORK

Jesus answered The Pharisees and The Sadducees after they complained about Him working on The Sabbath day when He healed someone.

John 5:17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

Christ said that He and His Father Work. What type of Work is performed? Christ answered that question. In Matthew 18:11 Jesus said, "For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost."

I Corinthians 15:21-26 ²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ²⁵For he must reign, till he hath put all

enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

Jesus is doing The Work by bringing every person to Salvation. Christ is Restoring The Tree of Life as it was in The Garden of Eden. Jesus will destroy death, which will be the last enemy. No one will remain dead. Ultimately, everyone is Saved. But every man must be Saved “...**in his own order....**” (I Corinthians 15:23). This is The Work that Jesus is doing through, and by God, by means of His Father’s Holy Spirit.

JESUS QUALIFIES

The Apostle Paul said that Jesus was being made perfect, and as a consequence, Jesus became The Author of Eternal Salvation. This means that Christ had to qualify first, as The Author of your Salvation (Hebrews 5:9). Also read Revelation 5.

Christ has to Restore Life to The Whole Human Race. How is this done? It begins by **He, being made Perfect**.

Hebrews 10:5-10 ⁵Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me: ⁶In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure. ⁷Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me), to do thy will, O God. ⁸Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings

and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; ⁹Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second. ¹⁰By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Paul quotes these Scriptures from Psalm 40. These texts prophesy The Christ coming to do God's Will by offering His Body as a sacrifice for everyone. How does Christ perform The Father's Will to become that sacrifice?

THE TEST

Jesus came to Save that which was lost in The Garden (The Tree of Life). He first had to destroy "the works of Satan." Remember that Satan is the god of this world. So, by defeating Satan "Spiritually," Christ proves that He is, indeed, your Savior and Redeemer. After Jesus was baptized by John, God, His Father, declared that this man is His Beloved Firstborn Son (Matthew 3:17). Afterward, Christ went into the wilderness to be tested by the devil. In the wilderness, Christ fasted for forty days and forty nights. Then, Jesus became ravenously hungry (Matthew 4:1-2). After forty days, one can only try to imagine the state of total exhaustion that Jesus, in the human flesh, felt without food and water. But Jesus had to fast in this manner, to prepare Himself to qualify, humanly, in order to win His contest with Satan. The Bible states that Jesus was "...**an hungred.**"

(Matthew 4:2). This “**an hungred**” really means “to pine away,” or “to starve.”

There is an extremely important Spiritual point at this juncture. The test was whether or not Christ was The Word of God. Since Jesus was given God’s Spirit without measure, and spoke The Words of God (John 3:34), Christ was tested by Satan. Christ proved that He was truly The Word of God (God’s Son). Indeed, this was a universal test for all of God’s Creation (Romans 8:22). It is by The Word of God, literally God’s Words that were put into Christ, beginning at His birth, which, will ultimately happen to everyone (I Corinthians 15:28). God is reproducing Himself by His Words, The Word of God that will be in you, according to your growth, at your designated time frame. Christ, therefore, will be in you.

Since God is reproducing Himself to procreate Sons and Daughters, all who are Saved, including Jesus Christ, and the rest of mankind, must come from The Father, Almighty God Himself. The Word nor The Holy Spirit could not have been separate beings along with God, The Father.

For God to reproduce Himself by having Sons and Daughters, all mankind must come from God, The Father, directly just as Christ did, or you have nothing but confusion. That is what a family is.

HOW CHRIST WON OVER SATAN

What did Satan use as his weapon to attempt to defeat Christ? Satan used God’s Word, which is more powerful than a two-edged sword (Hebrews

4:12). Christ's first test was over food! In that ordeal, Jesus purposely allowed Himself to become desperately hungry by abstaining from food and water for forty days and nights. He was prepared for the test.

What did Satan ask Christ?

Matthew 4:3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, **If thou be the Son of God**, command that these stones be made bread.

What was Christ's answer? In Matthew 4:4, Jesus said: **"It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God."**

Jesus proved that The Word of God was in Him from birth. He truly was The Word of God. He was The Son of God. That was the test; and Jesus passed and qualified. Now with His ongoing Life, He had to live The Word of God and fulfill every Scripture written about Him (Mark 14:47-49). It's God's Devine Thoughts, The Logos, in Christ which proves He is The First Begotten Son of God.

In John 14:8, Philip, His disciple, said, **"...shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us."** Then Jesus answered:

John 14:9-11 ⁹Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? ¹⁰Believest

**thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me?
 the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself:
 but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.
¹¹Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in
 me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.**

Before Christ was taken to be crucified, He told Philip that he would know who The Father is by seeing Him (John 14:8-8). Why is this? Jesus said that He did not speak His “Words,” but rather that He spoke The Father’s Words – or The Word of God – which was in Christ from birth (John 3:34). This is how Jesus defeated Satan. It was by speaking The Words of God, and by doing the works of God’s Word. That is why Christ said that you must live by every Word of God. God’s Work is His Word, which is in His Son. Jesus Christ is The Word of God.

PROOF CHRIST WAS THE WORD

Many believe that Jesus came to give His Life for your sins. This is True. Jesus defeated Satan by proving that He was The Son of God. He was Living every Word, which proceeded from the mouth of God. He was The Word of God in The Flesh.

John 14:10 states that God’s Work is the same as God’s Word. Jesus said He did not speak His own Words, but He did speak everything that The Father told Him.

Christ said in John 14:11, “¹¹**Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.**” Watch how Christ Lives – so that you can believe His Works. What was Christ's Work? His Work was to Live Every Word of God. Jesus said that the proof that The Father is in Him, is by watching Him Live Every Word of God.

To reveal Jesus was God's Son, He had to live His Life according to The Scriptures. But He also had to Live and Experience every Scripture that was written about Him. At the time of Christ, The Old Testament was the only Scripture. In Psalms 40:7, David prophesied about Christ. David quoted from God's Book written in God's Thoughts. “**Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me.**” This refers to Christ in the Future as a “human being.” Apollos was a mighty Biblical Preacher. He publicly showed by means of The Scriptures that Jesus was The Christ (Acts 18:28).

Furthermore, Acts 13:29 Paul said when Christ was hung on the tree and crucified – that everything that was written in The Scriptures about Him was fulfilled. In His human Life, Christ fulfilled everything that was written about Him in The Word of God.

Remember, Jesus said that if you didn't believe that He and The Father are One, then believe The Works that He does (John 14:11). What was His Work? Jesus lived by Every Word of God and thereby proved He was The Son of God – because when He died, He had fulfilled every Scripture written about Him. Jesus is The Son of God!

MOSES WITNESSES THE WORD OF GOD

It is evident that The Scriptures prove The Word of God is equated with God's very Words. In Psalms 40:5-7, David states that God's Words are written in The Bible from God's Thoughts (verse 5). God's Thoughts cover all of His Plans and Purpose about Christ and eventually – you.

Jesus said that Moses accused The Pharisees and The Sadducees of his day (John 5:45-47). Why was this? It was because Moses wrote about Christ and said that Israel should believe the coming Messiah, Jesus Christ.

John 5:45-47 ⁴⁵Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. ⁴⁷But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

Read what Moses said about Christ.

Deuteronomy 18:15-18 ¹⁵The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; ¹⁶According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. ¹⁷And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which

they have spoken. ¹⁸I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

GOD IS THE WORD OF GOD

Who is The Word of God? God is. That is exactly what John 1:1 states. Moses clearly states that Christ is The Word of God and only spoke God's Words (Deuteronomy 18:18). Genesis 1:1-2 also states God, The Father by His Word, created everything.

For Jesus to be The Son of God, He had to defeat Satan by Living Every Word of God that was written about Him. He had to be sinless, and finally offer His Body as a Sacrifice for your sins.

Jesus Christ is truly your Savior and Redeemer. But He is "The Author of Your Salvation" because He Lived Every Word that came from God. He, as The Word of God, is doing God's Work as His Son. As The Firstborn, He is the beginning of God's strength, which is God's Word through The Power of The Holy Spirit.

The pre-existence of Jesus was not in the form of another "God being," but as The Word of God, which was God's Glory (John 1:14). God's Glory is The Word of God as administered by God's Holy Spirit, which became Christ, the human man. This "Shekinah" is God's Presence in Thought, and is The Power of The Holy Spirit of God, The Father.

To deny The Word of God as God, The Father's Words coming from God Himself, is to deny God is The One doing The Work. God, by His Word or Glory, works in His Son, Jesus, just as He works with each Christian, and eventually, all mankind. God will be "All and in All" (I Corinthians 15).

God gave to Christ, His Son, His Firstborn, His Holy Spirit, and His Word. The Apostle John warns that anyone who doesn't believe Jesus came as a human being is anti-Christ (I John 4:1-3).

God's Work is to reproduce Himself in everything (I Corinthians 15:28). God is reproducing Himself by His Son, Jesus. Jesus is God's Firstborn Son receiving God's very Words in Him by The Power of God's Holy Spirit. This is The Work that God and His Son, Jesus, are doing. They are fulfilling The Very Words of God, for you to have Eternal Life.

CHAPTER 2

GOD'S GLORY

From the very beginning, Satan wanted you to believe there could be more than One God. Satan, being a deceiver, wanted to be like God, and produce sons of his very own. He was never interested in the begotten sons who are actually procreated by God Almighty Himself (Isaiah 14:12-14). Satan wants you to believe that God doesn't want you to eat of The Tree of Knowledge, because then you will be wise. When you do eat, he says that you will be as a god knowing Good from Evil (Genesis 3:5). Satan told Eve that she should have the option to decide for herself. Then she would be a god.

Why was Satan so intent for you to believe in more than one God? Satan, himself, wasn't satisfied to be just an angel, or even a very high-ranking angel. He is the one who wanted to be "the begotten Son of God" – instead of Jesus. As a consequence, Satan was opposed to God's Plan of Salvation for all mankind. He was jealous.

From that time to the present, Satan has been busy deceiving humanity

into making many gods. He instituted the worship of the Creation itself, such as the sun, moon, trees, oceans, and rivers – so that everyone would believe in more than one God. So, as time passed, people would believe in many, many gods by bowing down to animals or nature itself or to statues and idols.

God countered all this with basic instructions. God gave The Second Commandment, which told Israel not to make any likeness of their God. This is because humanity would then begin to worship that image as if it represented God. It is a major transgression to worship an image. This is idolatry. When anyone says that the graven image only makes a person think of God, it really doesn't, because that image is not God.

Satan, who is the greatest liar of all, has successfully duped the world into believing in many gods. Satan has even convinced the world that The Son of God, Jesus, was God before his human birth. Satan has many believing that The Holy Spirit is also another God – rather than God's Power, which leads you into The Truth. Satan's purpose is to keep anyone from becoming the very begotten Sons of God. Satan wants as many people as possible to become his own sons, not God's Sons who will be "...**all in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28).

The questions which should be asked: "Who was Christ before His human birth?" "What is God's Holy Spirit?" And then finally, "Is there more than one God?"

If Christ were God before His human birth, then Jesus would be His own

Son. If The Holy Spirit were another God, then Christ would be The Son of The Holy Spirit. Therefore, logically, humans would either be The Sons of Jesus (since He was presumed to be God), or else The Sons of The Holy Spirit (if, indeed, The Holy Spirit is God). That is the type of confusion Satan would want you to believe!

The Apostle Paul said that God is not the author of confusion. The word “confusion” in the Greek language means “tumult” (I Corinthians 14:33). If there were more than one God, then that notion would surely produce “confusion,” just as it has already confused individuals throughout the ages in the realm of religion.

On the other hand, God is extremely logical. In fact, the word “logos” comes from the Greek “to be logical.” The Scriptures alone will tell you who Christ was before He became a human being, called “The Son of Man,” through Old Testament prophecies.

Many claim that Jesus was The Logos God or The Word of God before He was human. They quote John 1:1 as their proof. **“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”** But nothing proves that Christ was that Word, as indeed, being another God before He was human. That text declares that whatever The Word was – it is God and is with God. It plainly and clearly declares that The Word was God Himself, and nothing else.

You only need to know the Greek meaning for the word, “logos” to be certain of this point. In Strong's Concordance #3056, the Greek tells you

that “The Word” or “logos” is nothing more than “The Thoughts,” “the mental faculty” or “The Divine Expression of God.” So The Word is nothing more than God's Divine Thoughts. It is not a separate deity or being. The Word is only God's Thoughts, and no more than that.

Then, in John 1:14, you are told that The Word which is God's Divine Thoughts, eventually became flesh, or Jesus Christ. So Jesus became The Son of God when He became flesh, and received God's Word in Him. How did this happen? **“For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him”** (John 3:34). THAT IS YOUR ANSWER.

Christ became The Word by God's Holy Spirit. This was when He was born as a human. God's Word (Logos), God's Divine Thoughts or Word, was put into Christ by The Holy Spirit. Therefore, The Holy Spirit can't be a separate god in Christ. The Holy Spirit put all of God's Divine Thoughts into Christ, at birth. The Holy Spirit then, can only be a Power from God (not a separate god) that put God's Truth or Word into Christ. The Holy Spirit, therefore, is merely God's Power, and The Word is only God's Divine Thoughts – nothing more. The same process occurs in Christians. When Christians receive God's Holy Spirit (although not the double portion that Christ received), then this Spirit leads you to understand God's Words (the Logos).

The important question is this: “Who was Jesus before He became human?” Jesus, Himself, tells you the answer in His last prayer to God before He was arrested. **“And now, O Father, glorify thou me with**

thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was” (John 17:5).

Notice, Jesus did not ask God to give Him “The Glory” that God gave to Him before the world was. Christ then would have been a separate deity or a second God with The Father. Christ plainly states that He, before the world was, was not another God, but that He was in The Father as “The Glory of God.” Ponder that carefully.

It is usually the simple, understandable Scriptures that people often do not generally read thoroughly, but which tell you The Truth. Your Savior tells you that He was not God before He was human. Before the universe was created, Jesus was still in The Father as God's Glory. Now, the question is posed: “What is God's Glory?” When you know God's Glory, then you will, also, know who Christ was before He became human.

The Greek for “glory” is “doxa” (Strong's #1391). The definition comes from #1330, “dokeo,” which means “to think,” “good reputation,” and then #1391 “doxa,” is defined as “dignity,” “honor” or “goodness.” God's Glory in the Greek means “God's Thinking” or “God's Thoughts” with all of its goodness and morals.

Notice what Paul said: **“For all have sinned, and come short of the glory [doxa] of God”** (Romans 3:23). God's Glory is all The Goodness of God. It is the sum total of All that God is. Humans, who are sinners, fall short of that Goodness. God's Glory is everything that God is – and does. This includes, God's Logos, and Power of His Holy Spirit, which is all of

God's procreative and creative Power.

In The Epistle of I Peter 5:4, The Apostle Peter said all will receive a "Crown of Glory" (doxa) when you become Spirit. Just as Christ, you will, also, become all of God's goodness or virtue.

The Apostle Paul said that The Israelites who went through The Red Sea were baptized unto Moses. Moses was The Prophet for The Israelites to find God. Paul, also, said this baptism unto Moses was in "the cloud" and in "the sea." What was this cloud? Israel drank the same Spiritual Drink and ate the same Spiritual Meat, which was that Spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ (I Corinthians 10:1-4). This is another clear Scripture which tells you what Christ was before He was born.

Notice how this Rock, Christ, didn't lead Israel, but only followed them. Was The Rock who followed them Christ? That answer is given shortly.

HISTORY OF ISRAEL

One of the most important Spiritual Lessons about God concerns the historical events that occurred between God (YHVH) and Israel when they came out of Egypt. Many who study The Scriptures have completely missed the real significance of why Israel was selected to become God's "chosen people."

When God made The Covenant with Abraham to bless him and his children with The Promised Seed (Christ), the result was that Israel totally

misunderstood God's Promise to Abraham. This calling was so The Nation of Israel could enter into God's Rest (Paradise).

This Promise continued from the time of Abraham, down to Isaac and then to Jacob. Jacob's name was changed to Israel, and with his twelve sons comprised the structural basis for the new nation of Israel.

When Israel migrated to Egypt, they eventually became slaves in that land. This occurred because after Joseph died, the new pharaoh didn't know what Joseph had done to Save all of Egypt from starvation. In slavery, the Israelites pleaded for mercy, and prayed to God for deliverance. Since Israel turned to God in this manner, God chose Moses as His Prophet to lead them to The Promised Land so they could enter God's Rest. Since the time of Adam and Eve, God was always ready to dwell with His people. In this case, Israel declared that they wanted Him. But they would have to prove this by obeying Him.

This Covenant or Agreement, which was made with Israel, was totally different from what God had made with anyone else. To no other nation in the world had God made such a personal Covenant. Since the time of Adam and Eve, God had not been any other nation's God. This was only the second time in history that a people could have had God, as their own personal God, with His Presence dwelling with them. Notice, in cementing His Covenant, God gave, not just one of His titles, but His very personal name YHVH, otherwise known as the "I am" or "The Existing One."

God, Himself, was going to dwell with them, not in a tabernacle or temple, but with them personally. After Israel failed, by sinning, they had to wait for their Rest much later in The New Heaven and New Earth. There will be no temple in The New Heaven and New Earth because God Himself will be The Temple, along with Jesus Christ (Deuteronomy 5:2-7).

THE EXODUS

When God called Moses from out of the burning bush, Moses was actually talking to “an angel” (Acts 7:30). Angels are “elohim” just as God is Elohim (Psalms 8:5). The word “angels” in this Psalm is “elohim” in the Hebrew language. Elohim is God’s title of universality, or plurality, that God is “...**all**” and will be “...**in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). That is why God said in Genesis 1:26, “**Let us make man in our image...**”

As God’s messengers, Angels (Elohim) have the job to carry out The Plan of God (Elohim) to make man become like God (Hebrews 1:14). The angel in the burning bush was God’s deputy who was talking in the first person in order to bring God’s people, Israel, out of bondage. Notice who brought Israel out of Egypt. Exodus 12:51 states that The Lord God brought Israel out of Egypt. How was this done?

When God used Moses to lead the children of Israel across The Red Sea, Pharaoh pursued them. The angel of The Lord (God’s angels) went before Israel. The Cloud followed Israel. Then, this Cloud stood between the pursuing Egyptians and Israel, so The Egyptians could not harm The Israelites. Who was in this Cloud? It wasn’t the angel of The Lord

because the angel was the first to come between them. (God's Glory in the Cloud still led Israel. The angel did not begin to lead Israel until Israel sinned at Mt. Horeb.) From then on, the Cloud followed the Israelites and the angel.

Besides the fact of Israel going through The Red Sea, Paul said that The Cloud was also a baptism. This Cloud led Israel to Mt. Sinai. What or who was this Cloud?

THE CLOUD

In Exodus 23:20, after Israel sinned at the mount, by breaking God's Commandments, God said to Moses, "**Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared**" (verse 21). God instructed the nation to obey this angel's voice because He will not pardon you. God explained that this angel spoke in God's voice because My Name is in him. This was brought about by the strict adherence to The Law of Moses in The Letter, which caused their death. There was no forgiveness. From this point on, God was not with them, to lead them. Instead the angel was designated to lead Israel.

After God gave Moses The Law (Exodus 33), The Israelites built a Tabernacle, and God restated that the angel would lead Israel to their Rest in The Promised Land (Exodus 23:1-7). This Tabernacle was not in the camp of Israel, but outside. Why was this? The Cloud, that led Israel out of Egypt, was by The Tabernacle, and there The Lord spoke to Moses

(Exodus 33:7-9). Then in verse 11, it states that God spoke to Moses as a friend, “face to face.” Who was in The Cloud? God was in The Cloud and spoke to Moses at The Tabernacle. God no longer would speak to, or be with, Israel. The voice was the angel speaking in the first person.

At this point, God had threatened to destroy Israel, and only permit the tribe of Moses, The Levites, to live. God would no longer lead Israel, as His people. The Tabernacle was built outside the camp of Israel since God would no longer be in their midst. If Israel had not sinned, proving they were stiff-necked and unrepentant, there would have been no need for a Tabernacle or Temple. In Deuteronomy 5:29, God said, **“O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever!”**

From here on, God would only allow The Levites to serve Him. Israel could only go into The Court of Israel, but not “the inner courts” of The Temple where God was present in The Holy of Holies. The veil separated God from rebellious, unconverted Israelites – and the rest of the world – until Christ died, and the veil was “rent in two.” By this means, their access to God was Restored.

This frightened Moses. God was going to kill the entire nation and only allow The Levitical Tribe to live (Exodus 33:12-13). So Moses asked God if He would be gracious and reconsider Israel to be His nation. At this point, Moses was Israel's mediator to God. Moses wanted to know that God was going to be with him, as well as have Israel be His nation.

Moses feared that God would not be with Israel. God was adamant. God would no longer allow Israel to deal with Him "Personally." God said to Moses that from now on My angel will lead Israel to God's Rest in The Promised Land. God would no longer lead them in The Cloud (Exodus 33:1-3).

God said that because Israel was unrepentant and stiff-necked, He wanted to burn them up (verse 5). God instructed Moses to pitch The Tabernacle outside of the camp. God did not intend to be with Israel (verse 7).

When Moses entered The Tabernacle, The Cloud stood at the door of The Tabernacle. God spoke (through an Angel) with Moses from The Cloud. Speaking to Moses, face-to-face, as a friend (verse 11). Then Moses besought God to give him grace or forgiveness, which was a promise that God should keep Israel as His nation. This was an extremely serious stand that God took concerning Israel.

Then, God told Moses, that because of Moses' kind act of interceding on Israel's behalf, God declared that His Presence would go with them (Exodus 33:14). In the Hebrew language, "God's presence" was not "God, The Deity, being with them," but only "God's Presence would be with them." In Strong's, #6440, "paneḥ," means "face" or "countenance." Later you will know what God was really saying to them.

In Exodus 33:17-18, God said that He would let His Presence go with Israel because Moses found grace in His sight. Then Moses said, "**I beseech thee, shew me thy glory.**" Moses did not want to see God, but

only His Glory (God's Glory). Remember that Christ said, **"...glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was"** (John 17:5). This is the same Glory that Moses wanted to see. God's Glory was not Christ as a separate deity, but a part of the very Glory of God, The Father, Himself. This was God Almighty, the YHVH. This was The One God and The Only God. Christ was a vital part of that Glory.

In Exodus 33:19, God said, **"I will make all my goodness pass before thee...."** This is right out of The Bible. God Himself states that God's Glory is all of God's Goodness! It is not Christ as a separate deity. In fact, God said that His Glory is not God, the Being, but rather God's Glory in His Total Goodness!

Strong's, #3519 (kabow'd), #3519 and #3513 for "glory" is defined as "weight," "copiousness," "magnificence," "wealth" or "all that God is." God's Glory is truly all of God's Goodness. All of God's procreative and creative power as God, The Logos or God's Thoughts – is God's Glory (I Corinthians 3:16-17, 6:19-20). This is by The Power of God's Holy Spirit.

In God's Glory, the first prominent aspect is The Spirit of Christ. Through that Spirit, all of God's creation, along with God's whole Purpose and Plan, is prepared for God's future Sons and Daughters. All of God's complete goodness and love for everything is being worked out in God's Plan – and it is "God's Glory." All that "is" comes from God. God is to be "All and in All." The "doxa," Greek for "God's Glory," in The New

Testament and “kabow’d” in The Old Testament carries the same meaning.

Read Exodus 33:20-23, and you should see clearly that no one has seen God because they would not have lived. They would have been burned up. Hebrews 12:29 states that God is a “Consuming Fire.” Moses, when hiding in the cleft of the rock, and looking at God’s hind parts – really only saw God’s Glory – or the radiance from God’s Being which contains all of God’s Goodness.

Moses’ face would shine brightly after he talked to God. To look at God’s Glory gives one a sunburn. Moses, however, never saw God Himself, but only His Glory. Christ was in that “Glory,” the same “Glory” Jesus had before the world was. Christ, The Firstborn, before the world existed, was with The Father, but only in God’s Glory.

God’s face shines as the sun. When one looks at the sun in its strength, you never see the sun directly. You only see the sun’s radiance or light, but not the very surface of the sun itself. So it is with God. Moses spoke face-to-face with God, but he only saw God’s Glory or radiance, which possesses all of God’s Goodness.

Christ was in God’s Glory. That is what Jesus said in John 17:5. Before Christ was human and became The Word (Logos) by God’s Holy Spirit, He was part of God’s Glory.

In Exodus 34:5, you read that The Lord descended in The Cloud, and stood with Moses, and he proclaimed The Name of The Lord. All that

Moses saw through The Cloud was God's Glory, or radiance, which was all of God's goodness. Moses never saw God directly.

This Glory of God would follow Israel as the angel of The Lord, which led them through the wilderness (as God had promised Moses). When the angel stopped and Israel made camp, The Tabernacle was set up and The Cloud with God's Glory would reside in The Tabernacle. Only The Levites could go in and serve. Israel could only be in the court of Israel, but never in The Tabernacle. Only The High Priest could go into The Holy of Holies on The Day of Atonement. God would not deal with Israel directly because they had been unrepentant and rebellious.

Christ was The Rock who followed Israel in God's Glory, as the angel led them to The Promised Land. The Jews called God's Glory, "The Shekinah," from the Hebrew "Chakanh," where "God dwells with them."

Jesus was never a separate deity or God. There is only One God, and that is why The Commandment states, "**Thou shalt have no other gods before me**" (Exodus 20:3).

When you let The Scriptures plainly state who Christ was before He was human, the answer is so simple. The simplicity in Christ is exactly as The Bible states. You are told to watch, lest: "**...your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ**" (II Corinthians 11:3).

Jesus Christ, before He was born as a human, was God's Glory. God's Glory is defined as all of God's Goodness! You have seen that God's Goodness is the totality of what God is. His Logos or God's Divine

Thoughts are empowered by God's own Holy Spirit. This Glory is the totality of God's riches of procreation and creative powers. This Glory is the act of creating Sons of God who will be formed in the likeness and character of God.

The Apostle Paul clearly stated that, God, in these last days, speaks to you by His Son (Hebrews 1:2). Then in verse 3, the text states that Jesus is the brightness of His Glory. Realize that "brightness" in the Greek language means "radiance" or "light." Remember also, that God is Light (I John 1:5).

Therefore, Christ, before He was human, was within the radiance – or complete Goodness of God. That Glory which pre-existed in God, became flesh or Christ. Then, Jesus became The Living Word of God by The Power of God's Spirit (John 3:34).

John said that Jesus became The Logos or Word when The Glory of God begot Christ as The Only Begotten of The Father (John 1:14). The Greek for "only begotten" is "monogenes." Monogenes translates into the "beginning one."

When you say that you have your father's genes, it means you began from your father just as Christ did. God's genes are God's Glory by The Power of God's Holy Spirit. This Glory had The Very Spirit of Christ within it. It was by God's Glory through Christ that God created all things by His Son.

There is only One God and Father of all, and One Lord Jesus Christ (I Corinthians 8:6). There has never been two gods or three gods, or more. There is only One God, who is The Father with Jesus Christ, His Son. Be sure you believe The Commandments, “**Thou shalt have no other gods before me**” (Exodus 20:3).

You must remember The Purpose God required Israel to build a Tabernacle and ultimately The Temple.

The Tabernacle and The Temple are required, as is the true temple in heaven, because God will not dwell with carnal or unconverted beings. Only a High Priest can directly come in God's Presence whether of Levi or Melchisedec. God does not hear sinners (Isaiah 59:1-2). A mediator is always necessary.

CHAPTER 3

PURPOSE OF GOD'S TEMPLE

Once you comprehend the puzzle your Bible contains, and it makes sense to you, then God opens a deeper Spiritual meaning for what you had previously thought you understood about His Word. This is what Spiritual Growth is all about. What is the process by which Your Father and His Son, Jesus Christ, use to keep everyone growing Spiritually? To understand, you must start right at the beginning with how God will bring about the condition called "...all in all" (I Corinthians 15:28).

God has a Temple in heaven (Hebrews 9:23-24). In The Old Testament, God told Moses to build an exact copy of The Tabernacle. That was the first action that would be followed later in Solomon's day when a Temple will be constructed on earth as a type of The Heavenly Temple (Hebrews 9:1). Consequently, everyone should ask some simple, but important questions.

Why does God have a Temple? Is The Temple in heaven, the place where God dwells? Did God dwell in The Temple, which was on the earth? To understand the real Purpose of God's Temple, you must first comprehend

the underlying foundation of how God wants humanity to grow Spiritually. God desires that all individuals become God's Word through His Son, Jesus, The Christ.

GOD'S DWELLING

Stephen gave a sermon to his accusers before they killed him. After he explained how God brought His people, Israel, out of Egypt to worship Him, God uttered (or gave) The Ten Commandments (Acts 7:36-38, Deuteronomy 5:2-29). Keep in mind that God said He **“added no more”** immediately after The Ten Commandments were given (Deuteronomy 5:22).

Initially, God's requirement for making Israel His people was for them to keep His Commandments in their hearts. At this point, and under these conditions, the rest of The Law was not given by God. He gave only The Ten Commandments. Later, you will see the significance that the remainder of The Law (Torah) has in relationship to The Temple of God.

After Israel heard God utter The Ten Commandments, they proceeded to sin by worshipping the golden calf they had built. God became angry, and said that He would destroy Israel, and then build a nation from Levi because of Moses (Deuteronomy 9:12-14). In Exodus 33:1-4, God told Moses that He would no longer remain in the midst of these people, or lead Israel to The Promised Land. Rather, He would send an angel to lead them. God would not dwell in their midst because Israel had sinned, and God would not hear or be with an unrepentant people (Isaiah 59:1-2).

After Moses pleaded with God over this matter, God instructed Moses to build The Tabernacle where God agreed to have only His Presence or Glory appear in that place. God, Himself, would not dwell in the camp. In Exodus 33:7, Moses pitched The Tabernacle “...**without the camp, afar off from the camp** [of Israel]....” In Exodus 33:14-23, God told Moses that only God's Presence would be present with Israel at various times in The Tabernacle. Every time God's Glory appeared over The Tabernacle, Israel knew that God's Presence was there.

Years later, when Solomon built The Temple, Solomon said, “Will God indeed dwell on earth?” Then Solomon acknowledged that even “**the heaven of heavens cannot contain thee.**” [God] (I Kings 8:27). So The Temple in heaven, as well as the copy of the heavenly Temple on earth, does not contain God. God does not dwell (or have) His Rest in a heavenly or an earthly Temple. If God's Temple in heaven or on the earth is not God's dwelling place, then there must be an entirely different Purpose for God's Temple.

Solomon said that he knew God dwelt in heaven, and not in The Temple on earth (I Kings 8:28-30). Then Solomon said that when Israel prayed in The Temple, and you hear the prayers of your people as if God were in The Temple, then God will acknowledge their prayer.

The Temple in heaven and earth is not where God dwells. Therefore, the real heavenly Temple and the earthly Temple, when it is rebuilt, must have a different Purpose than being God's dwelling place. What is that Purpose? It is vital to discern the answer to that question.

GOD AND SIN

Isaiah clearly reveals why God would not dwell with Israel when they sinned by building the golden calf, and then began worshipping it. Isaiah 59:1-2 declares: **“¹Behold, the Lord’s hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: ²But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.”** God will not have anything to do with sin. Sin is the reason that God no longer led Israel.

The Tabernacle replaced God personally dwelling in the midst of Israel. God, Himself, would not even listen to them. In fact, for Israel to be accepted by God, irrespective of God listening to them, they had to seek and worship Him in The Tabernacle. This Tabernacle was placed afar off from the nation of Israel, and only occasionally God’s presence or Glory would appear in The Tabernacle with The Cloud (I Kings 8:10-13). But, this Tabernacle was not God’s dwelling place, because of Israel’s sin (Acts 7:48).

God’s presence (or Glory) only would be in The Tabernacle (but not God, Himself). Israel called God’s Presence, “The Shekinah.” This Hebrew word, “Shekinah,” comes from the root “chakanh.” Chakanh means “to dwell in the neighborhood for a long time – but not eternally.”

Every time God’s Glory (Presence) was in The Tabernacle, and later in The Temple, Israel would say that “The Shekinah” was there. They knew

God Himself, was not there. Read all of Exodus 33 for further understanding and proof of these statements.

NEW HEAVEN AND NEW EARTH

A new heaven and earth appears at the conclusion of God's Purpose for man (Revelation 21:1). Paul said this event would happen when Christ would put an end to all of God's enemies – including Death (I Corinthians 15:24-26). Where there is no death, there is no sin. The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:3). There will be no death, and no sin! Then, in I Corinthians 15:28, God can and will become "...**all in all**." Eventually, without sin, God can – and will – dwell personally with mankind. What does God do at the future time of The New Heaven and New Earth?

At this time, God Himself will dwell in the midst of all people and everyone will be God's people (Revelation 21:3-5). God will be "...**all in all**." There will be no sin! God will sit on His throne and make everything new. God's Spirit, or The Water of Life, will flow freely – and be available to everyone – and they will be God's Sons (Revelation 21:6-7).

Then in Revelation 21:22, it is revealed that there will be no temple there. Why is this? It is because God Himself, and His Son Jesus, are The Temple. Since there is no more sin, God does not need a physical or heavenly temple for the people to seek Him. God Himself, and Christ, will be approachable in a very direct way. They will dwell in the midst of humanity. No longer is God "outside the camp." His Presence is there

with the people. God Himself will be with man personally, and will be **“all in all.”**

Israel sinned, thereby making The Tabernacle and The Temple necessary as a place to seek God. Since God dwells only where there is no sin, then what was the real Purpose of The Tabernacle and The Temple? The Tabernacle was built first. It was necessary as the portable arrangement, since the unrepentant sinful Israelites would die before they were allowed to enter God's Promised Land (Hebrews 4).

When the next generation entered The Promised Land, they could stay there as long as they kept The Old Covenant. In fact, the generation in the wilderness tempted God fully ten times, and ten times, they didn't repent. Remember, God was going to kill them when they sinned, but spared them because of Moses. Eventually, all of these rebellious ones died in the wilderness. God would not allow them to receive The Blessings of The Abrahamic Promise. However, once Israel came into The Promised Land, they could build a permanent Temple. They no longer needed a portable Tabernacle.

THE TEMPLE PURPOSE

Why was it necessary for The Tabernacle and The Temple to exist? Let God's Word plainly reveal The Truth. On the day of the dedication of The Temple, Solomon prayed to God and revealed the reason God had approved the construction of that Temple.

First, in Solomon's prayer, he asked if God will dwell on earth? (I Kings 8:27). Again, in I Kings 8:43, Solomon states that God dwells in heaven – and not on the earth. Then why build The Temple? The Purpose of The Temple was to be God's Court. He would Justify, or Release, the righteous (I Kings 8:28-32). There you have it. The Temple, as The Tabernacle, was God's Courthouse. In fact, Israel had received a special section in this Court of Law. Later, The Gentiles were also given a specified area in The Temple Court, so they could approach God.

The Temple was not God's dwelling place, but rather God's Court of Judgment. Why is this? It is because Israel was unconverted, unrepentant and rebellious. This Letter of The Law, legal works, was The Law in Court to judge carnal Israel. God had to give Israel The Letter of The Law which kills (II Corinthians 3:7). This was Moses' administration of death. It could put you to death, such as an "eye for an eye." The Purpose of The Temple was to be God's Court to try Israel for their behavior! God knew carnal Israel couldn't keep these Laws and The Law, therefore, condemned themselves. The Letter of The Law was to be kept in its entirety, or else you were found guilty of breaking it all (James 2:10).

CHRIST'S ANSWER

Jesus knew The Temple wasn't where God dwelt. Christ knew that His Father's House was God's place of judgment (or court). God's mercy seat was located there. What God wanted from Israel was Repentance, or a change of mind and heart. The Mercy Seat was established as God's

Throne of Forgiveness.

As long as Israel had a heart of stone (II Corinthians 3:7), and were unrepentant, then God would not forgive their sins. Without their sins being forgiven, God would not dwell with them and be their God. He, therefore, remained as their Judge, without mercy. If they didn't keep the entire Law, He would not accept them, but rather had them put to death. That is, also, what Paul told Timothy (I Timothy 1:8-9).

The Law was needed only for the unrepentant, unrighteous and the unforgiven sinners. That is why The Law was put into the side of The Ark – and not inside the mercy seat. Mercy or forgiveness could only be given if one's heart was fleshly (Repentant) and not made of stone. God wanted Israel to keep His Ten Commandments in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:29). Then, and only then, would God give them mercy or forgiveness.

Read Christ's answer. Jesus gave a parable about The Temple (Luke 17:9-14). Christ said that those who think they are righteous because they have The Truth – and look down on others – were compared to the two men who went up to The Temple to pray (Prayer is talking to God to make your feelings and requests known). One man was a Pharisee who kept The Letter of The Law, but did not understand The Spirit of The Law. The Pharisee who did not know or understand The Letter of The Law, was bringing his request to Christ (Galatians 3:24). The Publican, who was a sinner, and guilty according to The Letter of The Law, knew he was a sinner. What did the Pharisee pray? The Pharisee said; **“I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess”** (Luke 18:12). He made sure

that he kept The Letter of The Law. The Publican merely said, **“God be merciful to me a sinner”** (Luke 18:13). Christ said that The Publican went home receiving mercy (or was justified), whereas The Pharisee was still guilty because he did not understand that no one could ever keep the entire Law in The Letter.

Jesus knew God's Temple was where God's Throne and Judgment were. Being The Judge, what God wanted was Repentance. Israel did not realize that when one went into The Temple to pray, he was literally on trial. The Purpose of The Temple was to serve as God's Court where all were on trial. Since Israel did not know the real Purpose of God for The Temple as a Court, then Israel thought they were safe still doing The Law of Moses. They just didn't perceive Christ as their Messiah.

TEMPLE COURT

The intent of the words “to judge” in Solomon's dedication prayer carries the complete judicial process within its Hebrew meaning. The word “shaphat” in the Hebrew language means “pronounces sentence,” “gives vindication or punishment,” “to litigate” (trial), “defend,” and “plead.” This word promotes the basis for the entire judicial system all the way from “indictment,” to “vindication” or “punishment.”

The Tabernacle (Temple) was the place where Israel had to go because they were sinners. The Temple, as God's Court, either overlooked, or else forgave the sinner's guilt. Otherwise, the guilty would be condemned, and then put to death.

The basis of judgment in The Letter of The Law spelled out what was legal or illegal in God's eyes. It is the same today in nations judged by human law. On The Day of Atonement, all Israel came to The Temple for an expiation of their sins for another year. The Festival of Trumpets began the New Year. This meant that God accepted Israel for another year, but they were not forgiven their sins. The Purpose of all of these Holy Days was only a shadow of things to come through Christ, The Messiah. But their hearts were still like stone, and they never did repent. Therefore, they never received mercy and had to pay the full penalty as The Law dictated.

If their sins required the sacrifices of animals or meal offerings, etc., that was their penalty for that partial transgression. Murder, as well as adultery, required capital punishment. Different transgressions had varied penalties, but forgiveness of their sins was not possible unless they came to Christ. The Temple was truly a courthouse for criminals and sinners against The Law.

The Heavenly Temple had the same Purpose. The Temple in Heaven was also God's Court. Satan and one-third of the angels sinned against God, and so God would not dwell with them – just as He would not dwell with Israel on earth. Satan and one-third of the angels were thrown to the earth. The heavenly or earthly temples were the place where God judged (held court), and where God's throne was located. In heaven, the twenty-four elders sat with God – and on earth, The Sanhedrin of Israel (Elders) judged with Moses.

CHRIST'S THRONE

Once Jesus was resurrected and went to God's Temple in heaven, Christ received A Throne of Judgment on the right hand of God. This throne, however, was different. Since Christ was, also, a High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec, Jesus offered the forgiveness of sins – because only those who truly repented were accepted by God (Hebrews 4:14-16).

Jesus died for your sins, and when you repent, God will hear you and give grace because of His Son, Jesus Christ. No longer do you need to be reminded of your sins, because you now have God's Holy Spirit which reveals Right from “wrong” in your hearts. You have a change of nature or heart (Romans 2:12-15). The Letter of The Law no longer has any hold on Christians as it did with Israel (Israel's time of grace will come during The Millennium).

CHRISTIAN TRIALS

Does this grace (or mercy), which you received, mean Christians are not tried or tested? No, it does not. But your trial and testing does not require a physical Temple, because you believed Christ and you repented. No Letter of The Law is required. God's Law is in you Spiritually through Christ. Also, there is no court, and no Law that is needed to tell you Right from wrong. Christians, as followers of Christ, have God's Law written in their hearts by God's Holy Spirit.

Since God's house (Hebrews 3:6) is Christ in you (Colossians 1:27), then

your testing and trial is by God dwelling directly in you. It is God's Holy Spirit, which leads you to God's Truth (John 17:17).

Peter said that judgment must begin at The House of God (I Peter 4:17). However, judging in The New Covenant is a totally different process than in The Old Covenant. In The New Covenant, because God has forgiven your sins through Christ (with no penalty, as under The Law and its curse), therefore you now, as God's Begotten Sons, are Heirs (Galatians 3:6-7). God now dwells in you by His Spirit.

NEW TESTAMENT JUDGMENT

There are three different judgments found in The New Testament. The Old Covenant judgment system was different. It included the entire judicial process from indictment to punishment. This is what "shaphat" means in English.

The three Greek types of judgment are:

1. Krima, accused of a crime or indictment
2. Krino, go to The Law or trial, and
3. Krisis, the condemnation.

Once one repents and accepts Christ as Savior, only one type of judgment is legislated. In I Peter 4:17, "judgment" upon Christians is "krima" or "indictment." Since Christians have already repented, there is no need for a trial. Once Christians see their sins, they plead guilty and are forgiven

by the blood and grace of Christ. No trial period is needed to determine that guilt is necessary, or condemnation required. No Letter of The Law is necessary.

In The Final Judgment, all will be resurrected – both the repentant and the unrepentant. They will be indicted, tried and set free; or else face The Final Judgment of Krisis, their crisis of punishment.

The Temple's Purpose is clearly The Courthouse of God, where worshippers should repent and come to Christ. The Law's Purpose (Romans 5:20) was to do just that! Until one repents, one must come before God's Temple and be tried by The Letter of The Law, and will come under the curse of that Law. There will be no Temple in the distant future because God will dwell, not in a Temple, but will be **“in all,”** and everyone will be in His family as His Sons.

CHAPTER 4

GOD'S JUDGMENT

In John 7:24, Jesus warned you not to judge according to the appearance, but to judge “righteous judgment.” What is God’s Righteous Judgment? Christ warned that you should not condemn, accuse, or put people on trial by how one’s perceived guilt might appear. The Law of God demands that two or three Witnesses give testimony before anyone can be judged (Matthew 18:16, Deuteronomy 19:15).

Jesus reinforced the statement above, when He said, **“Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged:...”** (Matthew 7:1). That text means that if you go about accusing people about how they seem to appear, without having two or three Witnesses, you, yourself, will be judged more severely.

In The Day of Judgment, you will be judged in the same way that you judged others. The implications are that your Judgment Day would mean that everyone who thought you did wrong; will line up and accuse you of evil doing – in just the same manner that your circumstances, and your conduct, appeared to them on the surface. These are frightening prospects, are they not?

Christ said that if you don't judge righteously, then it will be more tolerable for The Land of Sodom in The Day of Judgment than for those who didn't know The Law (Matthew 11:24).

Christians must know how God Judges Righteously. You need to understand and discern this dreadful penalty. The prospects of being thrown into The Lake of Fire demand that you learn Righteous Judgment now – while there is still time.

Biblically, you can prove that God's Judgment demands a trial system, which most western countries operate upon today. (God's trial system will be covered later in this chapter.)

First, comes the accusation or indictment. Then, adequate proof by at least two Witnesses must be given. This is very much like the manner in which a grand jury is conducted, in order to decide if the indictment should go to trial. Following the trial, an individual is found to be either innocent or guilty – and then the punishment is specified.

TWO SYSTEMS OF PUNISHMENT

The question arises: “Does God believe in capital punishment?” Does God put someone to death if they commit a heinous crime or sin? The answer has to be both “yes” and “no.”

This is because The Law of God demands death for any serious crimes such as murder or adultery. Romans 6:23 states: “**For the wages of sin is death.**” God absolutely demands capital punishment for enormous sins.

If you keep all of God's Law, and yet break one point, you are guilty of breaking God's entire Law, and therefore, you are condemned to death (James 2:10). Since Romans 3:23 states that everyone has sinned, it stands to reason that all will die. Sin demands it. So every human being is destined to die (Hebrews 9:27).

Consequently, all humans who are born through the genealogy of Adam will die, but, in Christ, shall all be made alive (I Corinthians 15:22). These are two different outcomes for sinners. All die – and yet all will live. How can this be?

CARNAL AND REPENTANT

Peter told the assembled crowds to: “...**Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins,...**” (crimes) (Acts 2:38). You are guilty of the crime or sin, but because you repented, by Christ's authority, your sins have been forgiven.

These are two types of judgment. If you are unrepentant, you remain guilty of your crimes and die. When you repent in Christ, you are released from your sins and live. Read what Paul is telling you in I Corinthians 15:22. This text is one of the most inspiring on this subject.

God conducts two types of judgments with two different outcomes. If you remain carnal and unrepentant, you will die. If you repent, you are forgiven and released. The amazing fact is that all have sinned, and yet all will be forgiven in the ultimate “end-game” sense.

CARNAL ISRAEL

Previously, you have learned that The Purpose of God's Temple (besides a place of worship) was a Courthouse where judgment was rendered from God's Throne (The Mercy Seat). One comes before God in The Temple to worship God and to receive Mercy. However, Christ reveals that as long as one stays unrepentant, they are judged strictly by The Letter of The Law (Law's legalism), and receive no mercy, but only death.

In Exodus 23:20-21, God states that Israel sinned when they built the golden calf. Therefore, God condemned Israel to death, except for The Tribe of Levi (because of Moses). That was a definite conclusion, and so that generation died and did not obtain the right to enter The Promised Land to receive The Rest. Verse 21 reveals that God's angel would be their judge, since God would not be in their midst, and The Angel of The Lord could not give any mercy.

It is said: **“Eye for eye, tooth for tooth”** (Exodus 21:24). The Israelites had to keep the entire Letter of The Law (works, legalism) with no mercy given – only death. Why was this? The Letter of The Law was given as judgment for carnal, unrighteous people (I Timothy 1:9). The legalism of The Letter of The Law was to be their judge – without mercy. They were unrepentant. This legalistic Letter of The Law was added because they wouldn't repent (Galatians 3:19).

CARNAL JUDGMENT

When unrepentant people are put on trial and condemned, their judgment has an entirely different system – as opposed to the system that is employed for repentant people.

When King Solomon dedicated the first Temple and prayed to God, he said: **“³¹If any man trespass [a crime)] against his neighbour, and an oath be laid upon him to cause him to swear, and the oath come before thine altar in this house: ³²Then hear thou in heaven, and do, and judge thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head; and justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness”** (I Kings 8:31-32).

SHAPHAT

The word “judge” in the Hebrew language is “shaphat.” This Hebrew word defines the entire judicial system. To “shaphat” is “to accuse,” then “indict someone of a crime, then put them on trial to find this person guilty or innocent.” If that individual is condemned (guilty), then there is no mercy, but rather the full penalty is exacted for the crime or sin. This was God's Righteous Judgment for unrepentant criminals who were found guilty! Unrepentant criminals are the repeat offenders. They cannot control themselves.

Job was a righteous man, but he was self-righteous, and finally had to repent like everyone else (Job 42:5-6). But all along, Job had an accuser

who judged by appearance. It was Satan. Satan became Job's unrighteous judge. He was like a prosecuting attorney. But Satan always judges by outward appearance (Job 1:8-11). Satan saw Job was exceedingly blessed by God. This could not be denied. On the surface it looked like Job was righteous, because he was blessed. So this was a lesson in judgment, not only for Job, but for Satan as well.

So it is with Christians today. Jesus is sitting at God's right hand, and sharing God's throne. He intercedes for your sins by means of His shed blood (Hebrews 8:1-2). This is the positive side of the equation.

DEATH IS TOTAL DESTRUCTION

The Apostle Paul declares that: “**...all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;...**” (Romans 3:23). Remember that: “**...the wages of sin is death;...**” (Romans 6:23). Everyone dies. All have received the death penalty to pay for their sins. But what is death?

To many who do not understand, they believe you are only partially dead when physical Life terminates. Somehow, they believe you really do not completely die. Some hold to the notion that there is an immortal soul which goes to heaven at death. Hence, you are not really dead.

Others believe that a part of you, as a Spirit, survives and goes back to God until The Resurrection. In both cases, a part of you exists, and you really didn't completely die.

If you don't completely die, and a part of you still exists, then you have

not really died as Hebrews 9:27 states: “...it is **appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:**” If only the flesh dies (your body), then theoretically, the part of you which is still alive, whether with God or in heaven, remains as a sinner. In Romans 7:6, you read that Christians who repented and believed in Christ are considered totally dead to The Law. Paul said that since you are dead, then Christians should serve in the newness of The Spirit. That is why The Bible regards deceased Christians as being asleep when they die (I Thessalonians 4:14), as opposed to the unrighteous and unrepentant who have not been given The Gift of Eternal Life.

The word “death” in the Greek language is “thanatos.” This word “thanatos” conveys “total destruction.” When one dies, they do not exist anymore in any form. They are dead “all over” (Body and Spirit).

When Christ died on the stake, He said to God, His Father, “**My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?**” (Matthew 27:46). Jesus knew that He was going to totally die. In verse 50, Jesus gave up his last breath (or Spirit energy) and was completely dead. For three days and three nights, Jesus, The Christ, did not exist. Only His fleshly body lay in the tomb. Jesus did not exist until three days later, with the input of The Spirit of Life that was from God, The Father. This is how Christ was Resurrected.

Obviously, if Christ didn't completely die, but was only partially dead, He would not have paid for your sins. The wages of sin is death – complete death! Christ was totally dead, and didn't exist, and therefore, He qualified to pay for your sins.

THE GREAT GULF

In the example of Lazarus and the rich man, Jesus said that when the rich man was resurrected in The Judgment, he looked up from hell (the Greek word is “hades,” “the grave”) and was in torment from the heat of The Lake of Fire. The rich man, also, saw Lazarus in God's Kingdom with Abraham. The rich man said, “Abraham, send Lazarus to warn my brothers.” Abraham replied that there is a great gulf between those in The Kingdom, and those in The Lake of Fire (Luke 16:19-31).

What is this great gulf? Jesus gives you the answer. In John 5:24-30, the subject is The Resurrection of The Dead – as contrasted to those who couldn't receive Life, but were condemned to The Lake of Fire. In this text, Jesus said, “**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him [God] that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation [Lake of Fire]; but is passed from death unto life.” The great gulf represented the rich man who had to totally die – since he had not repented. But on the other hand, Lazarus had passed that gulf of death, and therefore, had received The Gift of Life.**

John, the Baptist said, “**And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree [human] which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire**” (Matthew 3:10). Those who do not repent, and do not produce fruit, must completely die; even the root itself must die. They must become totally dead. Nothing of that person can be alive. They are completely destroyed, so that nothing remains of

that person (Ecclesiastes 12:7). So, The Lake of Fire is God's Righteous Judgment. It is capital punishment for all those who are assigned to go into The Lake of Fire.

THE GIFT OF LIFE

How does one escape this Lake of Fire? Acts 2:38 proves that one must believe in Jesus by having Faith and then repent. As long as one is still carnal, one must be completely destroyed (die). The carnal nature must go.

THE RESURRECTION

Some do not understand the meaning of a Resurrection. They believe that God resurrects only to give Life to some – and Death to others. They believe that those who die receive no Salvation. But this is not Biblical. Jesus said that God does not destroy people forever, **“For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him”** (Luke 20:38). It was never God's Purpose to put people to death. People's own sins caused their death (I Corinthians 15:56). When God resurrects individuals, it is to give them Life. This is the main subject that is expounded in detail in I Corinthians 15.

The full content and subject in I Corinthians 15:12 concerns The Resurrection of The Dead. Is there a Resurrection? I Corinthians 15:19-20 declares that this is so. What is The Purpose of The Resurrection? You read that: **“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made**

alive” (I Corinthians 15:22). Read the whole chapter and you will see The Purpose of God is having a Final Resurrection to get rid of death (I Corinthians 15:54). The word “all” in one case (Adam) cannot be different from the word “all” in the second case (Jesus). If ALL died under Adam’s sin, then by logical deduction, ALL will live under Christ. The first ALL means the same thing as the second ALL. This process will be discussed later in more detail.

God resurrects people to give them Life. That is why Christ came into the world. I John 4:14 states that The Father sent The Son to be The Savior of The World. It is by means of redemption that you find Christ serves as Savior. Otherwise, Christ serves as a Judge in The Great White Throne Judgment. It will be shown it is Christ who was sent to be The Savior of The Whole World. I Corinthians 15 will thoroughly prove the full state concerning The Salvation of The Whole World. This should be the most wonderful news anyone has ever heard.

THE REPENTANT

How does God judge Christians? When one repents and believes Christ in Faith, they have passed from death to Life (John 5:24). But does God judge Christians? Yes, He does! I Peter 4:17 states that Judgment must begin with The Household of God. Christians are constantly being judged – but how?

You discovered that The Temple in Israel was a place of worship, as well as being a courthouse for God. There was only one type of “Judgment” in

the Hebrew language, which is identified by the Hebrew word “shaphat.” This word represents “the complete judicial process.” In other words, Israelites were judged by The Letter of The Law. If they broke one point, they were guilty of breaking The Whole Law. They went from the indictment of a crime, to trial, and then proceeded to condemnation. That is “shaphat.” But this is not the way it is when a Christian is judged.

The error comes from the way The New Testament was written in the English language. The specific problem is found in the word “judgment.” It has been assumed that there is only “one meaning” for judgment, when in actuality there are “three meanings.” The New Testament, by using the words judgment, condemnation, damned and even, at times, Salvation, conveys the thought that there is only one meaning for the English word “judgment.” Now you see the problem. But what is the solution?

Since there are really three different words in the Greek language for this word “judgment,” you need to discern the full meaning of each word in order to fully understand how God judges Christians righteously.

1. Krima - This Greek word for “judgment” is used to mean “accusing or indicting someone of a crime or sin.”
2. Krino - In the Greek, this word conveys “the process of going to trial,” or “proving one is innocent or guilty.”
3. Krisis - The definition here denotes “a time of crisis.” One is pronounced guilty or innocent as a “turning point.” As in all trials, punishment has to be decided. The Law can (a) release,

(b) impose probation, or (c) require payment of the full penalty, etc. It is the critical time of judgment, and it is time when one can ask for the court to have mercy.

All three of these judgments, as stated in The New Testament, must be addressed for the purpose of determining which meaning of the word “judgment” that God intends.

When referring to “Christian judgment,” the Greek word for “judgment” in I Peter 4:17 is “krima.” Christians can be accused, or indicted, for a crime or sin. However, their judgment goes no further. Why is this? Since they are Christians, they immediately repent, by admitting that they sinned, and then Christ, their Judge, forgives them. Christians settle out of court. Christians have their sins paid for by Christ’s blood, and therefore have no penalty. That is what God explains as being “righteous judgment” for the repentant. Just think about it for a moment. Forgiveness is complete. It covers all of the repentant individuals. This is incredible information for you to know.

CHAPTER 5

WHAT IS THE CHURCH?

What is The Church? This is a simple enough question. There are multiple thousands of churches around the world – with different creeds and doctrinal requirements for anyone who wants to join their group membership. Members, who do not agree with those creeds and doctrines, or faithfully follow them, are automatically excommunicated. Yet, all these denominations, sects, and corporations truly believe they are Christians – and feel they are the “true” followers of Christ. What does your Bible claim regarding the identity of The True Church?

WHAT IS GOD’S WORK?

Many believe that preaching The Gospel is God’s Work. But that is not what The Bible reveals. Christ said, **“This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent”** (John 6:29). Jesus said that He is the One doing God’s Work – and you need to believe Him, and His Words, so you can actually know The Work of God.

Christ came to preach The Gospel, which was His Father’s Message. This

Gospel was God's Message about His Kingdom. The message comes from His Kingdom by Jesus Christ, The Chosen Representative of that Kingdom.

Christ came to do His Father's Will, which is to Save humanity, causing everyone to believe in Jesus as their Path to be Saved (verses 38-40). That is The Work of God, which in turn, becomes The Kingdom of God. John, The Apostle said that Christ came to Save The World (John 4:14). How was this to take place?

THE CHURCH

Paul went to Jerusalem to discuss their established form of teaching on a particular point of doctrine (Acts 15:1-15). Up until this time, mostly Jews were Christians, and as a consequence, they believed that in order to be Saved, a Christian had to be circumcised – and must keep The Law of Moses (verse 5).

Just before Jesus went to His Father in Heaven, He told the disciples how they would be receiving God's Holy Spirit – so they could be Witnesses of Christ to the world (Acts 1:8). Therefore, The Church literally becomes Christ's Witness, which, in turn, is God's Work. Christians are to be as Christ was. Once Jesus went back to The Father after his resurrection, The Church was responsible for being A Witness of Christ – or God's Work.

Since mostly Jews were Christians (believing in Christ), they thought

Christians only had to be circumcised, and keep The Law of Moses in order to be a part of The Church (Acts 15). At this point, The Church leaders felt that doctrine was a necessary requirement for being part of The Church. Yet, Paul and Barnabas did not agree. Once Gentiles were accepted into The Church, The Church believed that circumcision (a new church doctrine) and the keeping of The Law were mandatory for The Gentiles, as well.

The Temple was still functioning in Jerusalem, and God's Presence was there, so Christians had to follow The Law, even if they were Gentiles. Therefore, circumcision was required for a male to come into The Temple to worship God. As long as The Temple was there, circumcision and the keeping of The Law was required. At that time, they didn't understand that a doctrine or a creed was not required to be in The Church. The Church was never based upon any doctrines and creeds. It was predicated upon something entirely different. What was that?

THE ECCLESIA

In the Greek language, the word "ecclesia" has been translated as "church." But this does not give a correct meaning for the word. The English word "church" comes from "circes" or "circle." A circle represented the sun and so the word "church" compares with "the circle."

But here is the catch. The circle was an image of the sun. Therefore, the English word "church," actually meant "sun worshippers" of God. This occurred when The Roman Church accepted the pagan holidays, and gave

pagan names to all aspects of Christianity. This was nothing more than so-called “baptized paganism” which only appeared as “Christian,” or Christianity.

The original Greek word “ecclesia” is what has been called “The Church” in English, but it has an entirely different meaning. The word “ecclesia” by definition refers to the “Called-Out Ones,” or a “general assembly.” It also means a “congregation coming together for a common Purpose.” For Christians, this meant anyone calling upon The Name of God through His Son, Jesus Christ, who was the vital central component of The Church. The true interpretation of the word “ecclesia” in this Christian sense meant anyone who seeks to call upon God by believing in His Son, Jesus. Anyone who believes in Jesus (God's Work) will have Everlasting Life (John 6:40). There is no doctrine, and no creed that was originally a part of this process. In short, The Church consists of those people who are called by God to believe in His Son. That is “the true identification” of “The Church.”

DOCTRINE NOT REQUIRED

Acts 15 defines The Church by stating that The Pharisees were a sect in The Church – even though The Pharisees, themselves, held to a different doctrine. These Pharisees believed Jesus was their Savior. That was all that was necessary to be a Christian, or a part of The Body of Christ. No doctrines and no creed were necessary. You could even become a sect within The Church, just as long as you believed that Jesus was your

Savior. Then, you are designated as the “Called-Out Ones,” and are part of The Church.

What is a “sect?” The Greek word for “sect” is “heretic” (Acts 15:5). A heretic is one who holds to a contrary belief than what is espoused by The Church. As long as the heretic believed in Christ, and wanted to be Saved, he was allowed to be in The Body. However, when the heretic became “schismatic” in the Greek, or “caused a split” by starting his own group, then he automatically departed from The Church.

Paul said there should be no schism (schismatic) in The Body (I Corinthians 12:25-26). As long as the heretic held to a different belief, but caused no split in The Church, this heretic could remain as a part of The Body, The Church. John said, they who are the anti-Christians, were not of you (The Church) because they didn’t remain in The Church (I John 2:18-19).

The Apostle Paul said that the unlearned (those not knowing The Truth) and the unbelieving (those who didn’t know God or Christ) were allowed into The Church (I Corinthians 14:23).

Scripturally, The Bible proves that the “ecclesia” could include anyone who was called by God even though they were heretical, unlearned or even unbelieving. When The Apostle Paul was called by God on the road to Damascus, Paul himself, had hated and imprisoned Christians. But once Paul believed in Christ, then he became part of The Church.

CHURCH HISTORY

Since the “ecclesia” (Called-Out Ones) was composed of anyone who was called by God to seek Him through Christ, you could ask: “When did The Church actually begin?”

When Israel was called out of Egypt to worship God and to hear His Word at Mount Sinai, the nation was called the “ecclesia” or “The Church in The Wilderness” (Acts 7:38). Why did Stephen identify The Nation of Israel as being God's Church?

It is for the following reason: Israel, as a nation under Moses, met the definition of what God's Church always was and always will be. Israel was called by God to seek and worship Him, and to hear His Word (Jesus). The “ecclesia” (Called-Out Ones) formed The Church. This designation applies even though The Israelites were not even converted, or had repented at that time (Deuteronomy 5:29).

Israel was given The Law of Moses to bring them to Christ, and they also, were in The Church (Galatians 3:24, I Timothy 1:9). Israel could be compared to the unbelieving people in I Corinthians 14.

When did The Church actually start? Notice what happened at the beginning in The Book of Genesis. Did The Church start in Genesis? Seth was born to Adam and Eve to replace Abel who had pleased God (Genesis 4:26). From the time of Seth and his son, Enos, men had begun

to call upon The Name of The Lord. This was the beginning of The Church, and the beginning of church history.

Cain and his children were cast out of Eden (The Land of Pleasantness) to be wanderers who were forced to seek God on their own. All pagan ideas about God came about through Cain's lineage. They were seeking God by means of their own human reasoning (Romans 1:2). On the other hand, the children of Seth sought God, and God was with them. All those who called upon The Name of God were The Ecclesia – The Church.

THE BEGINNING

Paul said God finished His Work on The Seventh Day of Creation (Hebrews 4:2-4). He, also, said The Gospel was preached directly by God's angel right from the beginning in The Garden of Eden. The Church started in The Garden. God gave Adam and Eve a choice to eat from The Tree of Life, or to follow their own ideas of Right and wrong (The Tree of Good and Evil).

From the very beginning, Adam and Eve could have called upon His Name. They chose not to. Therefore, God would not let them stay in God's Rest (Sabbath). God continued to call people to enter that Rest (His Church). Except for those like Abraham, everyone refused – until Christ came (Hebrews 4). At this time, through Jesus in you, you can enter that Rest, which is God's Church or "Called-Out Ones" – "The Ecclesia."

CHURCH PROPHECY

Jesus said, “Many shall be called (to His Church), but few chosen.” In fact, throughout Church history, Jesus said that many of those who were called first, would be last (The Jews); and those called last (The Gentiles) would be first to come into The Kingdom (Matthew 20:16). Jesus said many would preach in Jesus’ name and deceive many, including some of The Called-Out Ones (Matthew 24:5). Even The Elect had better beware (Matthew 24:24).

Christ gave a prophetic parable about the future of The Church. Jesus gave the parable of the sower of the seed (Matthew 13:18-23). When Christ explained the meaning of the parable, He said that some were called to hear The Truth and they listened – but Satan cast doubt into their minds. Another was called and compared to one receiving God’s Word in a stony place.

At first, the person came to Christ joyfully, but just as soon as the process of being a Christian caused a personal hardship, or some other minor trouble, they decided to quit. Still others hear God’s Word, understand the call, but quit because of being too absorbed in their own worldly Life.

Finally, some seeds of God’s Word fall upon those who are sincerely dedicated to God. They heed God’s call (to His Church), and continue to grow Spiritually. Throughout their lives they grow fruit, some a hundred fold, some sixty, and some thirty-fold (Matthew 13:23). These are The

Called-Out Ones, who became The Chosen Ones. Who are The Chosen in God's Church?

CALLED AND CHOSEN

Paul said Jesus presides over His own House of God – The Church (Hebrews 3:6). Paul continued and said The Church is God's House. It is called “...**the household of faith...**” (Galatians 6:10), and “...**the household of God;...**” (Ephesians 2:19). So The Called-Out Ones, The Church, or God's House, has been built by Christ (God's Work). Christ is The Head of The Church. Christ is The Church's husband, and loves her unto His death (Ephesians 5:24-28).

Jesus tells you about His Bride, The Church, and likens the members to ten virgins, of which five are foolish, and five are wise (Matthew 25:1-13). When Christ returns, the five wise virgins have prepared themselves for The Wedding Feast (God's Rest), and will become The Chosen Bride of Christ. The five unwise virgins are left out. But who are these five wise chosen virgins?

THE CHOSEN

Paul, in each salutation, disclosed exactly to whom he was writing. In each case, Paul defines where the brethren were placed – Spiritually. When he wrote to The Church in Corinth, he was explaining to them about being carnal and unrepentant (I Corinthians 3:3). Notice his salutation. Paul addressed The Corinthians as The Church of God in Corinth. Then,

Paul said they were called to be Saints (I Corinthians 1:2). Because they were carnal, he addressed them as The Called-Out Ones (Church) – but in fact, they should have been Saints. But they were not, because The Corinthians were carnal.

The Book of Romans is different. Since Paul hadn't been to Rome, he didn't even call this group The Church of God in Rome. He mentions The Romans, which were called to be Saints.

Now, consider The Epistle to Ephesus. This Church was well established. Paul personally spent much time there. Notice his salutation. Paul writes to The Saints at Ephesus and to The Faithful (Ephesians 1:1). Paul personally knew The Ephesians were growing Spiritually, and were diligently following Christ. He felt that others were merely faithful – or The Called Ones. The Chosen are The Saints who are growing continually. The Called, are the rest of The Church, who are Faithful, but not growing continually. So, why is one called a Saint?

THE SAINTS

Clearly, you can be in God's Church as a "Called Christian," and yet not be a chosen Saint. Over and over, Paul states that The Church, The Called Ones, are called to become Saints or The Chosen. In the Greek language, "hagios" means "blameless" or "consecrated" (Holy). Contrary to the world's idea, a Saint has nothing to do with miracles. Rather, this is a condition of an individual who is continually growing Spiritually. A true Christian in The Church is one who is becoming more like Christ every

day (which is God's Work). This person is Sanctified and Chosen of God because God is Spiritually, Reproducing Himself in this Saint, so that God can be: "...**all in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28). God calls many, but always keep in mind, that only a few will be chosen. God, who is calling you to His Church, is giving you a great Gift, which is a wondrous Invitation to be Saints, who will comprise The Bride of Christ.

Make sure you dedicate yourself to be one of His Chosen Saints. Now you may well ask, "How is one called?"

THE PROCESS

When God calls you to His "ecclesia" or "body," you could be an unbeliever (atheist), unlearned (without knowledge of The True God and Christ), or perhaps a heretic (as some of The Pharisees). You might even be a terrible sinner.

When Christ called The Apostle Peter to follow Him, Peter explained that he was a "sinner." In the Greek language, this word is an intensified form – which means he was a "heinous sinner." Peter had no regard to obey The Law or The Commandments, but did believe that The Messiah was to come soon. This belief stemmed from his brothers who were disciples of John, The Baptist (Luke 5:8).

After Peter was called, Jesus called Levi, a publican – a tax collector – to be his disciple. Disciples are students or learners who want to change their ways. You can see how they might have been grievous sinners,

atheists, agnostics or heretics (false teachings). Christ called them all to His "ecclesia" or Church. The disciples in God's Church are all being taught The Truth. As soon as they Repent and accept Christ, as their Savior who paid for their sins, they can be baptized. No doctrinal belief or creed is necessary. Once they have hands "laid on them" and receive God's Holy Spirit, they are a part of The Body of Christ – or The Church. The remainder of the people, even though they are ignorant of The Truth, are still being called to God's Church (I Corinthians 14:38). As long as no one causes a split (schisma) in The Church, they should always be welcomed in The Church fellowship.

When a baptized member refuses to repent of willfully sinning (breaking The Ten Commandments), then The Church is instructed to disfellowship that person, unless or until they repent. Once they repent, they are joyfully accepted back into The Church's fellowship.

Doctrinal beliefs and creeds are not a requirement for being in God's Church. Everyone is at a different level of Spiritual understanding. If The Church requires all members to be at the same level of Spiritual knowledge, there cannot be any Spiritual growth. Conformity hinders Spiritual advancement. It is important to understand that willful sinning is the only reason someone can be put out of The Church. There are no other reasons for excommunication from The Body – The Church.

From this point on, a Christian is continually growing Spiritually through The Grace and Knowledge of Christ to becoming a Saint; who is God's Chosen and can become a part of The Bride of Christ.

CHAPTER 6

WHAT IS THE MINISTRY?

Many sincere Christians believe the ministry is a special group of individuals within The Church, who hold an office as a rank. Consequently, this ministry is viewed as that part of The Church designated to do The Work of God. The rest of the membership need only attend services, pray, fast – and give their money to the ministry. They somehow feel this ministry has “authority” over the church membership, because people assume this “ministry” is composed of “superior individuals” who “appear” to be exclusive, ordained, “higher level types” within The Church. Is this what The Bible teaches? You need to know the answer!

CHRIST DEFINES THE MINISTRY

The mother of Zebedee’s children asked Christ if her two sons could share His throne, with one son on His right hand, the other son on His left (Matthew 20:20-21). Jesus answered her by saying that only His Father could make that choice. When the other ten disciples heard this request, they were angry. Matthew records the following:

Matthew 20:25-26 ²⁵**But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. ²⁶But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;...**

First and foremost, notice that Jesus said the minister should have no authority to rule over The Church. The minister must serve the people he is helping, rather than feel as though he occupies a position of “higher rank,” or is a “master” of some sort. Jesus said: “**Neither be ye called masters:...**” (Matthew 23:10).

The minister must be an example of how the brethren should conduct their own lives. That is one reason Paul would not receive money unless, or until, he was in need. Therefore, Christ said that if one occupies the position of a minister in God's House, then that person must serve The Church membership by benefiting The Church, and not himself. In short, a minister should: “**...not [be] greedy of filthy lucre [money]...**” (I Timothy 3:3,8).

Going further, Jesus said that if any individual wanted to be chief (more than others), let him be your servant. The word “servant” is exactly the same as “diakonos” – or “minister.” Christ said that if any man wanted to be more than any other minister, then he must dedicate himself to serving The Church more than anyone else.

Then Jesus gave the prime example to show how Christ Himself served

everyone by giving His Life for all: “...**the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many**” (Matthew 20:28). Very plainly, Jesus defines the ministry in these vital texts. He said that a minister must carry no rank or authority over anyone in The Church. He must be a servant, which serves others.

Therefore, to be a minister, one must attend to all the needs of The Church, and of God’s Work. He must do this more than anyone else in The Church. In other words, his degree of dedication to these things is the major point of qualification for being a minister.

But it goes beyond that. In fact, a minister should be willing to give his very Life for The Church Congregation. That is total dedication, in the most complete sense. In the early New Testament Church, many of the leading ministers gave their lives as outright martyrs. The example of being a sacrifice is very difficult to follow.

ADMINISTRATION BY GIFTS

The Apostle Paul said that you should be willing to present your body as a “...**living sacrifice**...” (Romans 12:1). Verses 2-6 further explain how that is done. Now this refers to everyone, The Entire Church.

As Christ’s servants, you must be willing to participate at this level of dedication. In those texts, Paul explained how this is a reasonable service, or duty, which a Christian must perform. Hence, Paul is warning the entire congregation not to think of themselves more than they should. The

brethren should concentrate on the needs of others.

What this means is that God gives to each church member, including the ministry, certain abilities to fulfill their individual role. This is all based on Faith (verse 3). In Christ, you are all One Body, though composed of many members (verse 5). Not only does this concern the ministry, but also The Church membership, because they have differing gifts, or abilities, to serve The Church (verse 6).

What do these gifts mean to those who manifest them in The Church? Paul said these diversities of gifts provide the membership with different administrations (I Corinthians 12:4-11). So The Gift given by God to each church member produces a variety of responsibilities within The Church.

Now, please consider that the English word, “administrations,” is actually the same Greek word used by Christ in Matthew 20:25-26 for “minister” or “diakonos.” The administration in The Church means that one would be a servant, and minister for the benefit of others. So the ministry or God's servants includes the complete church membership. Therefore, the entire church becomes the ministry – depending on the Gifts, which God gives to each individual member.

What is the ministry? The ministry consists of The Entire Body of Christ, with many members who form this One Body. Therefore, the Gifts that God gives to each person, means that all those “Gifted Ones” in The Church comprise the ministry. It is not enough to merely go into a church building and learn information, even if it is Bible teaching. Each and

every church member has a job and a responsibility within The Church configuration. Since everyone is in the ministry, then what is your own responsibility? Do you know?

First of all, consider The Gifts of The Spirit. What are some of The Gifts? Paul said that some may have a Gift, such as wisdom, knowledge, faith, healing, miracles, prophecy, different tongues, languages, or hospitality, etc. These gifts from God are given to certain members within the overall group. They are different administrations, or ministries, in The Church (I Corinthians 12:8-11). Paul states how these gifts produce responsibilities, or offices, within The Church (I Corinthians 12:27-29).

There are no ranks, or levels, but only an order of services, for those who work as servants in The Church. Then, as Christ instructed, His servants (ministry) should be:

1. The apostle (greatest servant),
2. Then prophets,
3. Then teachers,
4. Then miracles,
5. Then healings,
6. Then helps, etc

This is not an order of hierarchy or rank, but definitions of who will serve

the most (diakonos), and in what capacity. Isn't that amazing?

It is, also, surprising how some have totally departed from The Truth about this overall concept. One point of evidence illustrating the stark Truth of this claim is how wisdom, miracles, and healings can help in the most meaningful ways to serve The Church to the greatest capacity. But they are never a rank, or authority, or "pecking order" that is placed over others, as when some individuals may presume to be "an apostle."

WHEN DOES GOD CALL YOU?

Since these gifts are for the benefit of everyone, when does God begin to provide them for use by The Body of Christ? This is a most important question. Paul does not want you to be ignorant about The Spiritual Gifts, which God gives to everyone in The Church. He relates the history of these gifts. Paul said: **"...no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost"** (I Corinthians 12:1-3).

Paul tells The Corinthian Gentiles, that as soon as God calls them to believe in Jesus Christ, this begins a transformation by means of God's Holy Spirit working in them. They, on their own, without God calling them, did not come to believe Jesus was The Savior. His Holy Spirit caused them to come to Christ. This is the way it is with everyone. Every Gift comes from God, as long as God's Holy Spirit is working with you within God's Plan – or God's Work (I Corinthian 15:23). Some receive a

Gift at birth, while others may receive theirs later in Life, upon conversion into The Truth by God's Holy Spirit.

Many who come to Christ, do so long before they repent, and are baptized into The Church. They are functioning within a "Life-long process" that brings them to this maximum event – often called "conversion." In short, humans cannot believe in Jesus unless God's Spirit reveals it to them. This is what Paul was teaching.

God starts to deal with you from birth even though you may not come into The Church for many years. In some cases, God will allow you to be deceived by Satan to the point that some essentially live the life of a pagan, and keep pagan holidays. In one case, Paul expelled a fornicator from The Church and turned him over to Satan, so the fornicator's Spirit could eventually be Saved (I Corinthians 5:5). That man came to deep Repentance, and was accepted back into The Church (II Corinthians 2:7-9).

God's working with every person from the time of their birth, and allows each and every one to experience their Life in the best possible way, so that it will ultimately bring each person to Christ. Once a person starts to understand Jesus Christ is their Savior and Redeemer, they are being "called" to The Church. Paul identified the only way one can come to Jesus. It is by means of God's Holy Spirit revealing Him to them. Once God's Spirit opens your mind to Christ, then God grants you various Gifts to serve in His Church.

Paul declares that God gives to those in His Church, a multitude of different Gifts by the same Spirit (I Corinthians 12:4). He goes on to explain how church members have different administrations (I Corinthians 12:5). This English translation of “administrations,” is a poor one. Remember, the Greek word for “administrations” is the same Greek word that was translated into the English as “minister.” The Greek is “diakonos,” “a minister,” or “a servant” who waits on tables. So, who is in the ministry? It is the Entire Body of Christ, or The Church. Do not forget what Christ tells you.

Going to a Church meeting hall every week, and merely giving money doesn't illustrate Spiritual growth. Every church member has a job to do in the ministry, which is based upon the Gifts that God's Holy Spirit has given to each individual. If everyone in the ministry carries out his responsibilities in the true Spirit of being a servant, then the entire church profits, and continues to grow Spiritually (verse 7).

Jesus Christ is The Head of The Body, and all of you are His servants (Ephesians 5:23). The big difference, is that Christ, as Head, is your only Master, and everyone else becomes His slaves, or His servants. Each and every church member is a slave of Christ, because He is your Master and the future Husband to the entire Church. The Greek meaning for “servant” in this case, is “doulos,” or “a slave.” This means that you will virtually become a part of Christ's Body. You will become Jesus' slave in reference to His Will. Christ's Will is to do The Father's Will (Matthew 5:19). Jesus only does what The Father tells him to do. Jesus said: **“...My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me”** (John 7:16).

You must do as Christ did. When you become part of The Church, His Will is to have everyone serve in His “diakonos” ministry. In other words, you cannot be a church member, and merely sit on the sidelines. Besides being joyful for knowing God’s Truth, you have much more to do. You will either minister to others which will profit Christ’s Body, or else you will not be growing, and will instead be dying Spiritually.

WHAT IS THE MINISTRY TO DO?

The Bible tells you who is to be a minister. According to their Gifts, the ministry and The Church have a calling with a variety of responsibilities. Some should help the poor in The Church, while others should be hospitable, visiting the sick, helping the widows and orphans, and assisting the elderly. Still others offer wisdom and knowledge. The key is in the word “diakonos,” which means “a servant who benefits others,” and not themselves. You must all offer your lives as a living sacrifice. Your only example is Christ.

MINISTRY OF THE WORD

Now to those servants, or ministers of Christ, who are responsible for The Word of God. You will find that the ministry in The Church is selected exclusively by God, just as God personally calls each church member. No human is involved in this decision, nor any graduate from a theological school, seminary, or religious college.

God directly chooses the ministry of The Word. No one is trained to be a

minister of The Word, nor can he be one who can decide for himself to go into the true ministry of Christ, as an occupation or profession. Rather, it is “a calling.” But, from time to time, a person will state that he knows, in his heart, that God wants that person to give himself to the ministry. Biblically, this is not God's Way. Everyone in the Church is a minister by the gifts God gives. It is a matter of which gifts God gives and not your heart.

Paul shows there are elders (leaders) in The Church who are older men (I Timothy 5:1). These older men (Elders) who have lived longer, and have, also, labored long in The Word, doctrine or teaching (I Timothy 5:17).

Biblically, all elders or older leaders (even the ones who preach and teach The Word), are directly chosen by God, and are not decided by themselves or any other man, group of men, or any organization. Only God chooses those servants who are responsible to be an example, and to lead, to teach, and to preach The Word.

ADMINISTRATIONS OF THE MINISTRY

Those servants, or ministers, who teach and preach God's Word, fall into two basic categories. One is selected by God to help The Body of Christ, The Church, grow to Perfection. Biblically, The Church is referred to as The House of God. The second group of the ministry of The Word helps to oversee God's House. But their real service is more extensive, as it, also, reaches out to other nations.

Those who oversee The House of God are known as teachers, or matured elders. As such, there are

1. Pastors who oversee the entire local church, with some serving as
2. Bishops. Outside of this ministerial grouping, The New Testament introduces
3. Evangelists, who go out into the world to serve other nations,
4. Prophets, who foretell the future to all, and
5. Apostles, who not only preach to the world, but can also feed the local church.

These five groups cover the entire ministry of The Word. God calls them in different ways, and appoints each one of the ministry personally, at His own discretion. It is based on how each individual person has received their various Gifts.

GOD'S HOUSE

Moses was placed over God's House (Israel), in The Tabernacle, where God (His Glory) dwelt (Hebrew 3:2-6). This was The Church in The Wilderness (Acts 7:38). Moses, along with the Elders, was faithful in God's House (verse 5). He was the prime example upon which the following perspective is based.

Paul explained that Jesus was building His Father's House. It is a

Spiritual building. This took place after Israel had rejected God. Therefore, you must consider: **“Whose house are we?”** It is the House of Christ, just as you read: **“...whose house are we, if we hold fast...”** (verse 6).

The Temple was destroyed in 70 A.D., as a consequence of the First Jewish Revolt. As a result, The Church has now become The House of God. This occurred when The Church became the dwelling place of God (by His Holy Spirit, or God's Glory).

Matthew 18:20 says: **“For where two or three are gathered together in my name,...”** The meaning of words “in my name” means Christ is there. Each and every local church (where two or three are gathered in His name) is God's House. This is The Local Church, which is also ruled by Jesus as The Head, along with the elders (older men as leaders).

This compares with The Church in The Wilderness (Israel), only now God's House is a Spiritual House (John 4:23-24). Since The New Testament Church is a Spiritual House of God, the members in it must worship God Spiritually, and not by the human Works of The Law, or adopted paganism. Now, examine these two houses of God.

CHURCH IN THE WILDERNESS

Moses was placed over The Church in the Wilderness (Acts 7:38). He was accompanied in this assignment by the elders. Who are these elders, and how were they chosen?

The Law required that every male who opened the womb, should be called Holy to The Lord (Luke 2:23). God Himself, by God's Law, designated each firstborn male to be Holy unto God.

Hebrews 11:28 tells you that Moses had to sprinkle the blood (a type of Christ's sacrifice), lest he (the death angel) who destroyed Egypt's firstborn should touch them (Israel, The Church in The Wilderness). Why are The Firstborn males so important to God?

The Law declares that the firstborn should receive a double Inheritance from the father. This is because the firstborn is the beginning of the father's strength. The importance of The Firstborn (Christ) relates to teaching about The Firstborn with The Inheritance. Since this person represents the father's strength, he must be responsible for the family. When the father dies, The Firstborn male is the one designated to take care of the family, just as Christ does with God's House, The Church (Deuteronomy 21:16-17).

God said that all the firstborn of Israel (Church in The Wilderness) are mine – both man and beast (Numbers 8:17). When God smote the firstborn of Egypt, He Saved the firstborn of Israel to be sanctified for God's exclusive use.

When the father dies, the firstborn male becomes responsible for the family because he received the double Inheritance of the father's strength. So when the father dies, the firstborn male becomes an elder, which is the

older one over the father's house. As such, this firstborn becomes the leader of the family.

God told Moses to pick seventy men from among the elders (older firstborn) who would be the leaders of the people with Moses (Numbers 11:16). God directly picked the firstborn males, so that when they had aged sufficiently, these same men took control of the family. In this way they became Israel's leaders. Those seventy elders were to become Moses' helpers. The New Testament Church is supposed to do the very same thing in regard to those Ministers of The Word, who became the leaders of God's House.

COLLEGE OF THE PROPHETS

Many who claim to be ministers of The Word have attended schools of theology, religious colleges, or seminaries, and were ordained to the ministry. Is this God's system for fashioning a Minister of The Word? Does God call His ministers to preach The Gospel by training them in an established school?

Some religious groups point to II Chronicles 34:22 as a basis for this practice. This text refers to the college of the prophets. Hence, various people believe this is the Biblical authority for organizing religious schools for teaching The Ministry of The Word. What is The Truth?

The word for "college" in the English language can be very misleading. The word, "college" (Strong's #4932) had many meanings besides being

“a place of learning.” To understand its true interpretation, you would need to examine the original Hebrew language, and see how the word “college” is translated into English. The Hebrew word is “mishna,” meaning “a copy,” or “a duplicate,” which has nothing to do with learning, or instructing future ministers. This “college of the prophets” was referring to the fact that the prophets of God all dwelt together in the same place. Since all of them were prophets, they were essentially duplicates, or copies, of each other.

A good example would be when Elijah, The Prophet, was being replaced by Elisha, who was another Prophet. Fifty of the total number of prophets came from their dwelling place and said: “**...Knowest thou that the Lord will take away thy master from thy head to day?**” (II Kings 2:5). He was replaced by Elisha. All the prophets were duplicates of the total number of prophets who had been called and selected by God. They were all copies – or True Prophets of God.

In like manner, God has chosen all The Firstborn Sons as His Own. They are sanctified, or set apart, for a Holy Purpose by God. When the fathers died, all the firstborn males in Israel represented their families as elders, or leaders, of The Church in The Wilderness. God directly selected the firstborn male in a family to be an elder, or a leader, in Israel. All are copies or duplicates, just like the prophets. God Himself has picked His prophets, and has done exactly the same thing with the elders who are the firstborn males. For example, Elijah and Elisha were picked out from the rest of the prophets. Likewise, there were seventy-two men which were destined to become elders, or leaders, over Israel with Moses.

THE NEW TESTAMENT CHURCH MINISTRY

When the Jews rejected Christ as The Messiah, Jesus told His Apostles to go into all the world as a Witness, and preach The Gospel (Acts 1:8). However, since The Temple remained in Jerusalem, and God's Glory was still there (until 70 A.D.), The Apostles and other circumcised Christians went to The Temple to worship (Acts 3:1). Since The Apostle Paul was to preach The Gospel, first to The Jews, and then to The Gentiles, as his custom was (being a Jew), he attended the local Synagogue on The Sabbath (Acts 12:14). God's local house, the synagogue, was built by Moses, and was ruled by the elders, the Older firstborn (Hebrews 3:4-5). This was exactly how God had directed Moses.

After the conference in Acts 15:5 (which discussed circumcision and the keeping of The Law by Gentiles), Paul went and revisited the local churches that he had established on his first visit (Acts 15:36). Paul told all The Churches about the decision which had been made in Jerusalem that The Gentiles did not have to keep The Law, nor were they required to be circumcised (Acts 16:4-5).

Notice who made the decision. Acts 16:4 reveals that the decision was made in Jerusalem by The Apostles and The Elders in The Church. The New Testament Church had the same essential system for the care of The Churches – just like The Synagogues. The Apostles and The Elders (older men, firstborn) issued the Acts 15 decree (Acts 16:4).

Peter said that he was an elder. This is not speaking about an ordained

person, but all of those who were firstborn, older males in their households (I Peter 5:1). Then Peter continues in verse 5 and states how the younger men, not elders, should submit themselves to the older men as their elders (who were firstborn males).

The elders led and guided The New Testament church, just as they did with The Church in The Wilderness (Israel, Acts 7:38). God Himself chose the firstborn males whose fathers had died and made them to be elders (leaders) over The Church. No one can be ordained by mere men as an elder. God, Himself, directly selects who will become a Minister of The Word.

ORDINATION

Many Christian groups misunderstand the meaning of ordination. Paul told Titus to ordain elders in every city in Crete (Titus 1:5). Paul wasn't telling him to ordain them to be elders, but only to ordain elders for the specific positions needed. Only elders, or firstborn older male men, could be ordained to the ministry of The Word. God, by His Word, had already chosen those who were to be His elders (Numbers 8:17).

Ordination (laying on of hands) is The Churches' awareness of what God decided. Ordination does not give anyone authority over God's Church. Only God and Christ decide who will preach The Word of God as a true minister, or a servant.

Paul and Peter said the same thing. Paul declared that a bishop, or overseer, must be a married man (I Timothy 3:1-7). No unmarried, single person can be an elder or a bishop; they must be married. Also, they must be a firstborn son whose father has died; therefore they would be an older man – probably between fifty and sixty-five (I Timothy 5:9). In Titus 1:5-9, Paul said the same thing.

These individuals must be the husband of one wife, and are the firstborn elders picked by God! The word “elder,” “presbeuo,” or “presbuteros” (Strong’s # 4243 and 4245) in the Greek language means “senior” or “older person.” No young, married or unmarried men, should be considered for this vital responsibility. That is why Paul told Timothy, “Let no man despise your youth” (I Timothy 4:12).

Timothy was not an elder like Peter, nor was he a teacher or bishop, but he was an Evangelist. (Explained later.) Elders, teachers or bishops are to be examples to the local churches, which is God’s local House. To be a leader in The Ministry of The Word, one had to be an elder if they were to guide local churches such as Ephesus, Antioch, Smyrna, etc.

Deacons or Deaconesses, on the other hand, even though they were “diakonos,” “servants,” did not have to be an elder in the same sense. Why was this? It was because they did not have the responsibility of teaching or preaching The Word. The Apostles were very clear about this (Acts 6:2).

Ministers who teach or preach The Word of God should have nothing else to do in The Church, but pray and preach The Word. Ministers who preach, such as Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors (Bishops), Teachers, or Elders, should not have any responsibility for handling, or being in charge, over the money. Furthermore, one of their requirements is to not desire “filthy lucre.”

Who picks the deacons? It was not done by The Apostles, or ministers of The Word. The entire local Church selected the deacon or deaconess (Acts 6:3). Once the whole Church appointed those who were to be responsible for the money and other physical things, The Apostles and elders laid their hands upon them to show God approved the choice, according to the standards, which The Apostles gave (Acts 6:3).

To recapitulate, every one of the leaders, or guides, over a local Church who preached God’s Word had to be selected by God directly. These were only the firstborn males whose fathers had died. They were the elders over their own house and family. This meant they were overseers (bishops) of their own houses. They were responsible to take care of their own family (Acts 20:17, 28).

If these firstborn elders had The Gift to teach, they were chosen as the teachers who preached in The Church. Then, according to the standards laid down by Paul and The Apostles (I Timothy 3:1-7), out of all these elders, a pastor (head bishop) was selected over that local church.

God personally chooses The Evangelists, Prophets and Apostles, who are to go to the rest of the world. How does God personally select these who are to preach The Gospel (God's Word) outside of the local Churches?

Does going to a seminary, a school of theology, or a religious Christian school prepare you for The Ministry of The Word? Can a Minister of The Word be trained? The Biblical answer is no, and it can be proved Scripturally. In fact, an institutionally-trained minister of The Word usually denies God is The One (through His Son, Jesus), who actually chooses each and every one who teaches The Gospel.

One does not become trained to be an elder in The Church, but rather they are chosen at birth, and sanctified by God for a Holy Purpose, which is to become Ministers of The Word in their local Church. God, by His Son Jesus, directly chooses these elders at birth. No training or preparation is required.

How are The Evangelists, Prophets and Apostles trained for The Ministry of The Word? Do they, also, go to school for preparation? Absolutely not! Scripturally, they can only be chosen by God even more meticulously than the local Church elders.

How does God choose The Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors (Bishop-overseer), Teachers and Elders. There are specific conditions for the selection of each office of responsibility, with God-given Gifts (talents) for their exact duties. Without these gifts, one cannot be in The Ministry of The Word.

GIFTS OF GOD

Let's begin by laying the groundwork. You have already seen that everyone in The Body of Christ (Church) is a part of The Ministry. The ministry, being a "diakonos" or "servant," has a specific duty in The Church to give some form of benefit to The Entire Body of Christ (The Church).

On the other hand, The Evangelists go to the unbelievers, and to all the other nations of the world. The Prophets and Apostles may or may not go outside their immediate areas.

Each and every administration, or ministry, is directly given specific Gifts or Talents that will help fulfill their respective responsibilities in The Church. No official training is required! God, through His Son, chooses the ministry, and then each and every member performs according to the Gifts God has given them. No training or preparation is needed. God's Holy Spirit is granted to each ministry to know what to do. The Gifts that God gives to each ministry guarantees its success. God never fails.

If a Christian is blessed with wealth and is prosperous, that Gift of Prosperity places the obligation on that person to help more than other members by giving to the poor in The Church. That is the reason why the wealthy were selling their goods when The Church started (Acts 3 to 6). The primary reason was to help the poor. Consequently, The Book of Acts declares how there was no one who had immediate needs in the early

Church. Everyone had sufficient provisions. If one family had any lack, another member saw that they had sufficient.

There should be no one in God's House, or Church, without the basic necessities like food, shelter or clothing. This is the primary Spiritual lesson taught during the early Church period (Acts 4:34). Today, those with The Gift of Prosperity from God are in the ministry to help God's people who are poor and have needs.

Those who are given The Gift of Hospitality bear the responsibility of providing The Church membership with a sense of belonging, as with a large family. That is their ministry. Those who are given Wisdom can encourage others to follow The Right Paths of Living. Those who are possessed with Knowledge can teach in various departments of information, or perhaps write "How To" books. Everyone has a ministry as servants (diakonos), which specifically benefit others in The Entire Body of Christ.

Then there are others who have gifts of "Prayer," "Healing," "Miracles," "Tongues," "Prophecy," etc. Each Gift is given to each member to perform their particular service in their own ministry, which requires no official training. God personally gave these Gifts to each member to benefit all the others in The House of God.

Now, examine the difference between the local Church ministries which are led by the firstborn elders, and those preachers who proclaim The Gospel to the rest of the world as Evangelists, Prophets and Apostles.

THE TWO GOSPEL MINSTERIES

The local church ministers of The Gospels who are Pastors (Bishops), Teachers (Scribes), and Elders only perform the Gifts that God has given them in their local Church area. They are not assigned and/or transferred at the whim of a hierarchy, as can occur with some Christian churches. A minister does not have a rank over other ministers. Each ministry must be ready to help anyone in The Church whenever there is a need.

Paul said to: **“Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves...”** (Hebrews 13:17). Why is this? It is not because they have authority over anyone, but because: **“...they watch for your souls [lives], as they that must give account...”** (Hebrews 13:17). It is a matter of love and concern, and not a rank. The English word for “rule” is a poor translation. The Greek word “peinao” means “to have confidence in,” or “trust.” You obey by listening to them, not because they have authority over you, but because you have confidence, and trust them to know they will teach you how to grow Spiritually.

The Apostle Peter clearly said that no one should be lords (masters) over God’s heritage, but are to be an EXAMPLE to The Flock (I Peter 5:3). Every ministry (every church member) should be an example to all the others in The Church, according to The Gifts that God has given. This is what God intends. Whether this concerns a newly baptized church member, or an apostle, all are to minister as servants, and then by example, they are to help each and every other church member.

APOSTLES

Who is “The Head Apostle?” Is it Peter or James? To understand who the head apostle might be, one must understand the definition of an Apostle. The Greek word “apostolos” (Strong’s #652) merely means, “he that is sent,” “a delegate,” or an “ambassador.”

An ambassador represents The One who has sent him. Wherever the ambassador goes, he acts in the place of The One who sent him. He is a witness of The One who sent him. The ambassador is to be like “The One” the ambassador represents.

The only True Apostle must be sent by God Himself, or His Son Jesus. Only these individuals have the proper authority. A group of humans gathered together and voting to make a choice in picking an Apostle is not Biblical.

Sometimes the founder of an established religious group is viewed as an Apostle. But this type of thinking is not Biblical. What this does is to impose human convention upon a Biblical concept. Humans cannot determine, or be involved in, the selection of an Apostle, no matter how sincere the participating individuals may be.

The Apostle Peter knew the original Apostles couldn’t decide upon a replacement for Judas Iscariot. When the eleven gathered together to replace Judas, it came down to two men who could Witness Christ’s Life and Resurrection. But they refused to make a human-based decision

between Joseph and Matthias. Both men were perfect witnesses of all that occurred in Christ's human existence, including seeing The Resurrected Jesus. But The Apostles knew that only God, The Father, or The Glorified Jesus, could make that decision.

Therefore, The Apostles prayed to God, and asked Him to make the choice between these two. They asked God to select the one who had The Right Heart. Then, they cast lots. This was not a vote! Casting lots may have been done by putting the two names in a jar, and then shaking the jar. The first name to come out of the jar was the chosen apostle, whichever way this casting of lots was done. Matthias was the one who was chosen by God directly through this means. No humans made that decision, only God Himself (Acts 1:24-26).

Paul was an Apostle out of season. Why? Because he was not present to Witness Christ's Life as a human. However, to be an Apostle, Jesus still had to personally select Paul, with no human involvement. Read all of Acts 9, and you will see that Paul was personally chosen by Christ by means of a vision from Jesus Christ, Himself.

THE HEAD APOSTLE

This may come as a surprise to some, but there was no Head Apostle among The Twelve Apostles. No one was in charge over the others. That was forbidden by Christ, as reported during His Earthly Ministry (Matthew 20:25-26).

On many occasions, Peter would rise first to speak. This has caused some to believe that Peter was “the head apostle.” Not so. Jesus said to Peter that He, Christ, The Rock, would build His Church upon Peter. But Peter (Greek: “Petros”) was only the “pebble” or “small rock,” and not the great “crag” or “cliff” of the ROCK (Greek: Petra) that is specified in Matthew 16:18.

Furthermore, Peter was the one who had the keys to God's Kingdom (Matthew 16:18-19). But Jesus never said that Peter would be “the head apostle.” Remember, it is forbidden by Christ Himself. No one can be The Head except Jesus (Ephesians 5:23, Colossians 1:18, 2:10). Peter, as “the doorman,” could only open the door with the Keys to The Kingdom.

Some believed that James, Christ's brother, was “the head apostle” when he spoke in Jerusalem (Acts 15). Not so. James spoke in Jerusalem because, after Christ's death he received The Firstborn Inheritance, and became The Overseer, or Bishop of Jerusalem. He spoke out, and gave The Apostles and Elders his agreement that The Gentiles did not need to be circumcised or keep The Law. He was now The Bishop of The Church in Jerusalem.

So who is “the head apostle?” Only Jesus can serve in that role As The One sent directly from God. He is The Head Apostle. That is exactly what The Apostle Paul said: “**...consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;...**” (Hebrews 3:1). So Jesus is The First, and Head Apostle, or First One (Firstborn Son) to be sent directly from God. Notice John 3:34, where John, The Baptist said: “**For whom God**

hath sent speaketh the words of God...” The words “hath sent” are translated from the Greek word “apostolos.” Jesus was an Apostle sent directly from The Father.” These words are specifically designated by God to point to The Head Apostle, Jesus, as a Witness of God’s Kingdom.

WORKS EXPLAINED

Just before Jesus was taken to be crucified, Philip asked Him a question. Christ responded, “How long have you known me, Philip?” (John 14:9 [paraphrased]). In John 14:8-9; Jesus continued to say to Philip, “If you have seen me, you have seen The Father.” He said: “Look at my Life, Philip. I have lived every Scripture prophesied about Me in The Bible.” Then Jesus said, “The Father is in Me and I am in My Father. The Words I speak come from The Father and My Father does The Works” (John 14:9-10 [paraphrased]).

Then, in verse 11, Christ essentially said: “You can know I am sent (An Apostle) by My Father by The Works that I do” (paraphrased). The Works that Jesus performed give proof that Christ was sent from God. What are The Works? You must consider: the fulfilled prophecies, miracles, healings, resurrections, feedings, promises, true teachings, etc. Then Jesus told The Apostles in verse 12, “that they, The Apostles, would do even greater Works than He, Himself.”

Jesus very plainly states the qualifications for being an Apostle. This includes Christ Himself as Head Apostle. To be an Apostle, one has to be sent directly from God by His Son in person, or today it would be through

a vision from Christ – as well as doing The Works that Jesus did.

Notice that Paul stated the same thing. The Apostle Paul said: “**Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds [Works]” (II Corinthians 12:12). Christ also said that The Apostles would do even Greater Works than He did. The Book of Acts reports that merely the passing of the shadow of Peter over the sick was responsible for their healing (Acts 5:15). With Paul being an Apostle, he sent out aprons or handkerchiefs from his body and the sick were healed miraculously (Acts 19:12).**

Your Bible tells you that no human can be an Apostle unless Christ Himself, in vision, tells someone they are to be an Apostle (One sent by God). Also, your Bible reveals that an Apostle must perform miracles, healings, and wonders, just like Christ. This would be a sign (proof) that he is an Apostle from God. In no other way can one claim to be a True Apostle of God.

PROPHETS

A prophet's office (commissioned by God) is to preach The Word (Ephesians 4:11). Who can be a Prophet? Immediately, you might think this is a person who can foretell the future. However, there are actually two types of Prophets. One category would be someone who holds an office, like The Prophet, Agabus.

Agabus was from The Jerusalem Church and was a Prophet of God.

When he was visiting in Antioch, he stood up and foretold how there would be a great dearth (drought) in the world during the reign of Claudius Caesar (Acts 11:28; Acts 21:10). Agabus occupied The Office of a Prophet because he foretold the future.

How would one know if he is a True Prophet of God? The Scripture clearly states in Deuteronomy 18:15-22, that if a Prophet foretells the future accurately and in all stated detail as he prophesied, then that person is a True Prophet of God. If only a tiny part of what The Prophet stated is not true, that prophet is not a Prophet of God – he is a false prophet. Consequently, there should be no problem in discerning a True Prophet of God. This is one type of Prophet. What is the second type of Prophet?

GIFT OF PROPHECY

The Gift of Prophecy is different from The Office of a Prophet. One who occupies The Office of a Prophet, foretells the future. In fact, a woman can hold The Office of a Prophetess just like Anna in Luke 2:36. But a woman cannot be a Pastor (Bishop) of a local church. Also, she cannot be a Teacher (Scribe), or an Elder. All those responsibilities belong to a firstborn male (whose father died) who is an Elder over The Household of God.

The Law of God (Torah) states that a woman cannot be an overseer over a man (Genesis 3:15; Ephesians 5:23). That is why Paul said the women should keep silence in The Church (I Corinthians 14:34). Women cannot be preachers or ministers of The Word.

In addition to a woman being a Prophetess, she can, also, be a Deaconess. The office of a Deacon has the responsible for the physical duties in The House of God (Local Church). As long as a woman is not rendering Judgment over a man, she can be a servant with the designation of Deaconess (diakonos) – or she could minister as a Prophetess (I Corinthians 14:34). All other ministerial offices must be held by a male. Why? The Law of Inheritance is passed on as overseer of the house only to firstborn males. It has nothing to do with intelligence or superiority of a male over a female.

Did you know that every Church Member has the potential to prophesy?

In reference to Spiritual Gifts, Paul said that he wished every Church Member could prophesy (I Corinthians 14:1). In verses 23-24, Paul declared when the entire Church came together, and every Member Prophesied this would be good for the entire Church. But, just what did Paul mean?

The word “prophesy” in the Greek is “propheteuo” (Strong’s #4395) which has two meanings. One particular Office of a Prophet “is one who can foretell events or the future.” The second meaning “is to speak under divine inspiration, or to discern God’s Will or Word (Logos).” The Office of a Prophet foretells the future, but having God reveal His Divine Word is a Gift and not an office.

One who studies God’s Word and understands its mysteries, has the potential for The Gift of Prophecy. Those who have an understanding that

is revealed from God about His Word, should speak in The Church, and then The Church should make a judgment like the Bereans did in Acts 17:11 to see if it was, indeed, The Truth of The Bible. If it is Biblically True, then that man is an inspired Preacher of God, and has The Gift of Prophecy.

EVANGELIST

What is an Evangelist? To understand how God chooses an Evangelist, you need to check what the word means. The Greek word for “evangelist” is “evaggelistes,” which means “A Preacher of The Gospel” (Strong’s #2099). What is The Gospel? In Strong’s Concordance, the Greek word “Gospel” is “the word” (#2098) means “an announcement of Good News.” An Evangelist does this very thing.

WHO IS RESPONSIBLE?

Who has God made responsible for preaching The Good News, or Gospel? Amazingly, God states clearly in Genesis 1:26, “**And God said, Let us make man in our image...**” The image means to be like God. But, to whom is God speaking?

This is an age-old question. Many believe that God, The Father, is talking to Jesus as The Word (Logos), who is a second deity with God. Is this concept true, or do The Scriptures clearly reveal The Real Truth about this verse?

Notice Hebrews 2:6-7 reveals that humanity was made a little lower than the angels. How can this be? Angels are Spirit, while all mankind is subject to death. What job does an angel have? Hebrews 1:14 plainly tells you the job of an angel. It is to be A Minister (diakonos) who helps you and the rest of humanity to become Sons of God.

Now, The Biblical evidence is presented. Paul quoted Psalms 8:4-5 where angels are made a little higher than man. The Hebrew for "angel" in Strong's Concordance is "elohim" (#430). This is the exact same word translated as "God" ("Elohim") in Genesis 1:26. Clearly, God, in Genesis 1:26, is talking to The Angels (Created Sons of God, but not Begotten).

The twenty-four elders in The Book of Revelation, who are positioned before God's throne, are the first created angelic beings, and therefore, are Elders, just as The Elders in a local church are The Firstborn Sons. All are "mishna" (duplicates or copies) presented in the earlier explanation about the "College of The Prophets."

In the text of Genesis 1:26, God was sitting on His Throne and speaking to the created Sons of God and The Elders (First-created), who look like God (Male Spirit Beings). Consequently, God stated that they would help make man in their image. This is very logical (logos). It is clear and simple. There are not two Gods, or three Gods, but only The One God.

The Angels are responsible for preaching The Gospel to The World. The Angels are God's ministers (diakonos), and are messengers who preach God's Good News (Gospel). That is why An Angel is the one responsible

to complete the job of preaching The Gospel to The World (Revelation 14:6). Angels are responsible as ministers (diakonos) to make man into Elohim's (universal) image. What does all this have to do with the ministerial office of an Evangelist? It has everything to do with the work of an Evangelist. The Scriptures will prove how God appoints an Evangelist.

In Acts 6:5, Philip was one of the seven deacons chosen by The Church. Then in Acts 21:8, all of a sudden Philip goes from being a Deacon in The Church to an Evangelist. How did this happen? In Acts 8:26-40, Philip, The Deacon, is approached by an Angel, and is told to go and preach to The Ethiopian Eunuch, Queen Candice's treasurer. The Ethiopian was reading in Isaiah about Christ. Philip asked, "Do you know what you are reading?" The Ethiopian replied, "How can I understand unless a man teach me."

From this point on, Philip became an Evangelist. He was taking on the ministerial (diakonos) duty of an Angel to preach The Gospel to The World. How plain! But how did Philip know he was now an Evangelist? The Angel told him. A person becomes an Evangelist when an Angel tells him. That is why The Office is called an Evangelist. No human group, ministry, or an individual can decide or ordain an Evangelist. An Angel must reveal it, and there is no human involvement!

Notice the instance of The Apostle Paul and Timothy. In I Timothy 4:14, Paul said to Timothy: **"Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was**

given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery [elders].”

A prophecy stated that Timothy would be an Evangelist (led by an Angel). It was not Paul, but The Elders who laid their hands on Timothy (ordained him), just as God had revealed it by prophecy. Paul told Timothy not to let The Church despise his youth. Timothy was not an Elder like Peter. That is why Paul had to tell Timothy to do the work of an Evangelist (II Timothy 4:5). No person in God's ministry is ever picked, chosen, ordained, or trained to be a minister. Only God chooses. Simple and clear.

SUMMARY

Head of Church:

1. Head Apostle is Jesus Christ (Sent from God to do Works).
2. Apostles (Chosen by Christ and Works follow).
3. Prophets (Foretell the future and inspired preachers of The Word).
4. Evangelists (Directly led by Angels and prophecy).
5. Pastors (Bishops) are picked by the presbytery (Elders) according to Biblical qualifications.
6. Teachers (Elders, Scribes) who are Mighty in The Scriptures.

7. Elders (Firstborn sons who oversee not only their own family but The Church).

The listing above forms The Group who make up The Ministry of The Word (Logos). All are directly picked by God, and trained by The Gifts given to each by God's Holy Spirit.

Remember this. The entire "ecclesia," or "House of God," is in The Ministry (diakonos) as God's servants according to the "Gifts" God gives by His Holy Spirit. No human involvement can take place, because all have partaken of The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Looking to a ministry that is chosen by humans always leaves much doubt. When God reveals His ministry, there is no doubt how everyone is chosen!

CHAPTER 7

FINANCING GOD'S WORK

How does God intend to finance His Work? How can you be sure you are giving money for God's very Work? You will be amazed to learn that sending money to organizations for radio, T.V. and publishing – doesn't do The Work of God. Providing salaries, cars, houses, etc., doesn't fulfill the financing of God's Work, nor is it the way Christians should carry out The Work of God.

TITHING

Some people believe a Christian should give one-tenth or a tithe of their income to The Church ministry to do God's Work. Is this a correct practice?

To understand tithing, one has to know its very Purpose. You need to begin to learn the story from the Very Beginning. Giving one tenth of one's income, has a very clear and direct purpose. As a Law, tithing did not begin as one of God's requirements – it literally began about 430 years after Abraham (Galatians 3:17).

ABRAHAM'S TITHE

The practice of tithing begins with The Bible account of Abraham giving tithes to Melchisedec (Genesis 14:20). It was never required by God for Abraham to tithe. Rather, Abraham on his own volition, decided to give a tithe to Melchisedec. Why did Abraham do this? He gave this 10% to Melchisedec as a Witness, that Abraham was looking to God alone, for any prosperity that would accrue to him.

Remember, Abraham took nothing for himself from the spoils that were obtained from the battle with the five kings (Genesis 14:18-24). The tithes were given to Melchisedec after Abraham's military force had defeated the combined armies of the enemy. This tithe given by Abraham was not from any of Abraham's labor but spoils of war. This initial account of paying tithes set a standard that was followed later by Abraham's grandson, Jacob.

JACOB'S TITHE

Examine the story about Jacob's tithe. In this second Bible account featuring tithing, you find that, just like with his grandfather Abraham – Jacob offered a tithe to God. He did this in the same perspective as his grandfather before him had done. Jacob may have even learned this practice from his grandfather Abraham, or his father Isaac. However, these details are not given.

Jacob was asking God for protection from his enemies, in addition to

looking to God for his prosperity. Therefore, it is only logical to perceive how each of these two great patriarchs felt inspired to perform this act of giving to God. It was not an act of “indebtedness” – but rather one of “gratitude.” Doesn't that seem clear to your understanding? Both were an act of Faith. Neither Abraham nor Jacob had, as yet, received their Inheritance

At this point, it is absolutely essential to focus sharply upon a major issue concerning this “precedent,” or this “act of tithing.” It should be stated in no uncertain terms, that in neither case, did either action have anything to do with tithing as a Law (Genesis 28:20-22). It is time to be dogmatic on that point.

VOLUNTARY ACTION

If these two representative acts of tithing were not done because of a specific Law, then it was only done as a favor, and in The Spirit of service – toward The Most High God. In the situation posed here by Abraham with Melchisedec, this mystical figure was none other than: “**...the priest of the most high God**” (Genesis 14:18). Both Abraham and Jacob initiated this action by their own free will. It shows how they looked to God for protection and prosperity until they will be in God's Rest or Inheritance. It was an act of Faith.

To be sure you are getting the straight scoop, be sure to read carefully the context of both Genesis 14 and Genesis 28. This is a very important matter. It concerns you and your own finances. Therefore, when you

examine these two stories about Abraham and Jacob, you will see that in each case, the act of giving tithes was done on a **Free-Will Basis** to show their faith.

It was done voluntarily. This is because, in both cases, these ancient patriarchs only looked to God for their needs. The kindness was performed as part of a larger concept that involved prosperity along with protection from one's enemies. A Law was not required. In their hearts, these two patriarchs trusted God to provide for everything in their lives. In short, this act of generosity of giving 10% was prompted by each man's faith in God. It was not a Law – Period!

PREACHING MINISTRY

Some people believe they should tithe to The Preaching Ministry because Abraham tithed to Melchisedec. They take this from The Old Testament and try to put it into The New Testament by adding a bit of coercion and then Mix both of them together. This is a recipe for disaster. You may think that is a stretch. But it is part of a line of reasoning that has been used to bring about a belief in a hypothetical so-called “New Testament Tithing System.” What else would it be called? No matter what anyone might wish to call it, it is in complete error.

Yet, some seem to believe in such a notion. But it is only an illusion as subsequent facts will soon show. Various elements of this overall problem will be covered in more detail throughout this book.

THE LEVITES

There is another aspect that must be considered. Connected with this overall belief that tithing is a Law for you today is the notion that tithing is based on the tithes given to The Priesthood of Israel. But the matter of Abraham and Jacob's tithing was long before any tithes were paid to God's Priesthood serving in The Temple, i.e., The Levites.

When you read the context of the two accounts about (1) Abraham and Jacob, and (2) The Levites, you see that each situation has nothing to do with tithing – as a system, or a requirement (Hebrews 7:5-12). In Chapter 7 of Hebrews, the subject concerns the Spiritual development of an individual to the point of becoming Perfect. It is not about tithing. The tithing system for The Temple was only used as a point of illustration – and was not laid down as a doctrinal requirement. But often, these texts are not explained in this way. Hence a false meaning has been derived from these statements in Hebrews 7.

Tithing was mentioned in Hebrews 7 to illustrate that the story about Melchisedec came well in advance of the much later history concerning The Aaronic Priesthood. There is absolutely no other reference to support the notion of giving tithes to “the preaching ministry” in The New Testament.

LAW OF TITHING

Once God gave The Law to Moses, He also gave the conditions for

tithing. Without these overall conditions having been established for ancient Israel, no tithes were given – or received.

Also, one must realize that in The New Testament Period, no one was required to give tithes to anyone in the ministry. Why? Because no tithing system had been set into place – as in Old Testament times. In short, The New Testament never introduced a tithing system to replace the tithes given to The Temple Priesthood.

There is another aspect that must be considered. James declared that if anyone were to offend by breaking just one part of The Law, then they would become guilty of breaking all of The Law (James 2:10). This instruction is significant. In other words, if you decide to tithe, then you must tithe by keeping all the required conditions for tithing. This is The Old Testament System. There is no system revealed in The New Testament. That is what Jesus said in Matthew 23:23. Christ said The Pharisees sit in Moses' Seat; therefore, they were to do and observe everything they told you. That is what James said. You had to keep The Whole Law, not miss one point. Christ said in Matthew 23 one must only tithe to The Levites. Remember, The Pharisees sat in Moses' seat.

The Pharisees would tithe and fast, but they didn't keep the weightier matters – faith, mercy and justice. If you keep part of The Law, one must keep every single bit. Jesus said one must tithe to The Levites only, not to ministers, believe it or not!

What James means by his statement in James 2:10 is that a person would

only be keeping part of The Law by tithing today. He would not be able to keep The Whole Law. Therefore, by breaking just one point of The Law (that is required by tithing) makes a person a sinner, a transgressor of The Law.

When considering this important aspect, you would think that everyone would want to know the full story. Consequently, for those who decide they want to tithe, you must ask this critical question: “What are the conditions in The Law that you must fulfill – so that you can tithe?” The answer follows.

Five Absolute Conditions – For Giving Tithes

1. **Only Levites are to be given tithes (Numbers 18:24). That is why Jesus said in Matthew 23 that the Pharisees sat in Moses Seat or Administration, and The Jews were to do all they said, even tithe. Christ said tithes were to be paid only to The Levites. That is what Moses Seat or Administration demands. Jesus knew only Levites could take tithes.**
2. **To receive tithes, Levites cannot have any Inheritance in the land (Numbers 18:24).**
3. **The tithe is given to Levi as a reward for service in The Tabernacle (Numbers 18:31).**
4. **Tithes had to be brought to the location where God's name**

was placed. The tithes had to be eaten there. God was only present in The Tabernacle, and later at The Temple in Jerusalem (Deuteronomy 12:17-18).

- 5. Tithes had to be from The Promised Land only, as it all belongs to God (Leviticus 27:30).**

This is no small matter. These are the demands of The Law for a person who wishes to tithe. Do you believe God's Law? If a person believes they are to tithe to the ministry, then all of the above conditions must be met.

But don't you find it a bit curious that The New Testament has absolutely nothing to say about these conditions? Why is this? It is because tithing was not required in New Testament times. Tithes can only be given when A Temple exists and given only to The Levites. The Apostles, as Jews, with The Temple there, gave tithes to The Levites. The Apostles, as Jews, with The Temple, kept The Law (Acts 21:24). Shocking, isn't it? Yet whole church-funding programs today are based on tithing. People are urged to tithe. But, on what basis?

If these tithing instructions are not followed, then no matter how sincere a person may be – in the very act of tithing – they would be breaking God's Law – and would be considered as a transgressor. This is because a person is not fulfilling the whole Law. In this case, it is the whole Law about tithing.

DOWN PAYMENT

Consider this! All Christians, including the ministry, have received an earnest of their Inheritance (Ephesians 1:11). It is a down payment. It means that God has given you His Holy Spirit – which is: “...**Christ in you, the hope of glory:...**” (Colossians 1:27). This is the first Gift of God's Holy Spirit that is given to a person. It is given in advance of the full installment of The Holy Spirit, later, at The Resurrection. With this down payment, God dwells in you, and you have entered God's Sabbath Rest, and have received the Earnest of your Inheritance.

You now Rest in Christ (Hebrews 4:10). The Sabbath is a Sign of God's people. You, as The Church, have entered that Rest – that Sabbath – and Christ's Life, His Body, is manifested in you. Concerning this promised Rest, this is the intent of Jesus' message, when he said: “**Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest...learn of me...and ye shall find rest unto your souls**” (Matthew 11:28-29).

Now you can live as Christ lived when He was on this earth. You are His Witnesses (God in you) by His Holy Spirit. In this process you will find that “...**My yoke is easy, and My burden is light**” (verse 30). This is Christ's Rest.

What do these things mean? In part, it shows there is no burden of a “tithing” requirement. Furthermore, there is no Biblical basis for any sense of obligation to tithe to any particular ministry. Why is this? It is because the ministry has received The Holy Spirit as their Inheritance

along with all other Christians. This disqualifies the ministry from receiving tithes. Tithes are not The Inheritance of the ministry. Erase that thought from your mind. Rather, the ministry has the down payment of The Inheritance they will receive along with all others. The fullness of the Inheritance for everyone will come later at The Resurrection.

In retrospect, you can now see more clearly why Abraham and Jacob gave tithes voluntarily – because none had entered God's Rest or Promise (Hebrews 11:13). Also, the entire Church is “the priesthood,” and not merely the ordained ministry (I Peter 2:9). So who would pay tithes to whom? Would the Church people just pass them back and forth to each other – since all are part of the ministry? This is absurd. This type of conduct would certainly not be anything close to fulfilling The Law according to the five (5) basic requirements for giving tithes.

Consider this factor. When The Law was changed from The Levitical to The Melchisedic Priesthood (Hebrews 7:12), tithing was no longer required, because under Christ, tithing didn't meet the conditions of The Law. It is obvious on a Scriptural basis that a person cannot tithe to The New Testament ministry. This is because The Law under Melchisedec had changed. The Law became a Spiritual matter and not The Letter of The Law (The Written Law), which kills (II Corinthians 3:3,6). So how does God finance His Work today?

Through the simplicity of The Scriptures, you will be amazed. You will find that tithing is not necessary, nor are offerings required for T.V., radio, publishing, etc. This is not a stated requirement. Neither is money

required to furnish cars, houses, administration buildings, colleges, jet aircraft, and the like. This is because none of these things are a part of God's Work. Remember this – and please don't forget it – God's Work is to believe on Him who God has sent (John 6:29). Nothing else is God's Work. This was explained in Chapter 1.

DISCIPLES OF CHRIST

The principle of giving to God's Work is a very basic Christian tradition. It is, also, a prevalent condition. To be a Christian, Jesus summed up the matter in one simple statement. Christ said; **“By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another”** (John 13:35). This is a very simple reality that has been stated by your Savior.

How can you recognize a true disciple today? You can identify a Christian only if they have love for one another. There is no other requirement. Prove this saying of Christ's. See if this is the actual basis for how The Bible proves that God finances His Work.

HISTORY OF NEW TESTAMENT GIVING

The birth of The New Testament Church on The Day of Pentecost, with over three thousand newly baptized members, gave the full evidence of Christ's Disciples. It was performed in a simple act. They gave all that they had (Acts 2:41-45). This degree of giving, by The Church membership, was a proof that these people were The Disciples of Christ.

You will find how this giving of money was based on their love for one another.

But there is more. The rich man asked Christ what he must do to obtain Eternal Life. The story is found in Matthew 19:16-21. Jesus answered the rich man, and said: **“...if you wilt enter into life, keep the commandments...”** (Matthew 19:17). The rich man said that he had done this. Now what? Jesus then told him: **“...If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven:...”** (verse 21). Again, this is Christ's Principle in loving each other by never forgetting to help the poor.

There is still more. Christ mentions the widow who threw just two mites into the treasury. He said that she gave more than anyone else. She gave all that she had (Mark 12:42-44). Tithing – or giving offerings to God – isn't enough! As disciples of Christ – as Christians – you must be willing to give all that you have – but only to those in need. This is God's Way of financing His Work. It is bankrolled by Love.

You are called upon to give all that you have, but only for the needy – and this includes the needy who are the “preaching ministry.” The start of The New Testament Church had no needy or poor in The Church; they were taken care of because of Christian love (Acts 4:34). This was due to the love that The New Christian Church had manifested – by giving all they had so the needy could receive help. A true Christian Church should have no one in need.

DEACONS ONLY

Are you ready for another surprise? The early Church was structured in accordance with a basic requirement of the ministry (I Peter 5:2). When the widows in The New Church were neglected, The Apostles organized a system whereby the preaching ministry was not allowed to handle money. The preaching ministry was to have nothing to do with money in The Church. This concerned all aspects, such as requesting it, tabulating it, recording it, spending it, etc.

That is why Deacons were instituted. This one office establishes a basic balance of powers. Teaching ability is a power of the ministry, and controlling finances is, also, a power of the Deacons. Therefore, this situation poses a balance of power – which is an underlying safeguard for The Church. With human nature being what it is, it is helpful to have this balance set into place.

The Twelve Apostles stated that it was not right for the preaching ministry to have involvement with money. That takes them away from their true profession. The ministry is required to pray and preach The Word only (Acts 6:1-4). They are not even allowed to participate in who is chosen to handle the money. It was The Church – and not the ministry – that picked the seven deacons who would be in charge of handling the money for Church needs. Then, The Apostles confirmed the choice made by The Church (Acts 6:6).

The preaching ministry should not write about, preach about, ask for – and especially, they should never plead for – money at any time. As you will see, the laborer is worthy of his hire only when the minister's personal employment (outside job) is not sufficient to supply his daily ministerial needs. Obviously, expenses are incurred while performing ministerial service. So, there is a way for this to be handled. It is both Scriptural and logical, as well.

First, address a basic principle. Only the local Churches handle the money donated for Church needs. Only The Deacons, who are known to be competent, are allowed to be in charge of Church unds. Paul told Timothy that: “...**the love of money is the root of all evil...**” (I Timothy 6:10). In this context, Paul explained that ministers should not handle, or be in charge of, money – because it is corrupting. Paul said that when he brought an offering to help the needy in Jerusalem, this offering should be accompanied by some of the most trustworthy people. Paul said to send witnesses with the transporter so that no one could accuse Paul of wrongdoing (I Corinthians 16:1-3).

I Corinthians 16:1-4 has nothing to do with tithing. This was a collection to help others and not an offering for The Work. This collection was taken up out of love for those needy brethren in Jerusalem. This collection was designed to offset the suffering in Jerusalem because of a famine. It did not contain tithes or offerings for The Work.

Besides Hebrews 7, which discusses the process of perfection and not tithing, there are no other Scriptures in The Entire New Testament that

refer to tithing – except in The Gospels. But those two texts (Matthew 23:23, Luke 11:42) concern the people who were living under the old system that imposed the five (5) requirements listed earlier. Remember, in Matthew 23, Jesus said one tithes only to Levites as Moses directed. This is another subject. It does not apply to The New Testament Church. As you will see, all giving of money by The Church (even to the ministry) is based upon needs only.

GIVING TO CHURCH NEEDS

Paul gives you one of the clearest explanations of financing God's Work (by needs) in The Bible. Paul details clearly what The Church of God is financially responsible to provide. I Timothy 5 describes what the head of a household should give to care for his family, and what the local Church is responsible to do. Paul leaves no doubt, and there is not one word about tithing. In fact, even the ministry is included as those who give.

WORSE THAN AN INFIDEL

The main subject of I Timothy 5 is Church financial responsibility versus the financial obligation of the head of a household. The heads of the households were elders (firstborn sons) whose fathers had died and who had received The Family Inheritance. These Elders (older men) were, also, The Church Elders, or leaders, just as in The Synagogues.

Paul tells Timothy (I Timothy 5:8) that if any person would refuse to work and provide for their household, they were worse than an infidel. In fact,

Paul explained how these non-workers should receive no financial help from The Church. The Elders, Heads of Households, if they didn't work, were worse than infidels.

Later, you will see how this includes the preaching ministry, as well. Only the truly needy, which includes the ministry, when they temporarily find they need help, can receive Church financial aid – if they are in a circumstance beyond their ability to provide for themselves. Paul is a good example. By trade, Paul was a businessman who manufactured tents. So he supported himself, and refused to accept any help from The Church. However, when Paul was in prison, he did accept assistance, and was thankful for The Church's help.

Since the laborer is worthy of his hire (Luke 10:7), Paul would accept Church funds, but only when he was "in need." Notice another fact. Never was ministerial help requested from a Headquarters Church. This is because a local Church kept Church funds locally by their Deacons. A central Church that collected money and/or disbursed money did not exist. In short, preaching ministers knew better than to corrupt themselves with filthy lucre.

I Timothy 5:1 defines an Elder as being an older man or father. The younger men are as brethren. So an Elder is a senior, or older man, in The Church. A young man cannot be ordained as an Elder. This is confirmed by the word "presbyteros," which in the Greek language means "an older man."

Therefore, the older men were responsible for caring financially for their households as overseer (“episkope”). If they did not perform, they were infidels (I Timothy 5:8). Overall, the individual needy church members are financially supported by their own family heads, The Firstborn Elders. This was God's Welfare System.

The subject of widows comes under another category. Since they had no husband, and no Inheritance, they could receive Church help – if she was a widow “in need” (I Timothy 5:3). There were two kinds of widows. If a widow had a family with an older head, then the family had to be financially responsible. The younger widows were expected to marry again, and not be a Church burden (I Timothy 5:14). The older widows (over sixty) with no family in The Church to help them, would be helped by The Church as widows “indeed” (I Timothy 5:9, Deuteronomy 21:17).

There were also older men who were destitute or in need. There were two types (1) Elders (firstborn) who didn't preach, and (2) Elders (firstborn) who did preach The Word. Both, preachers and honorable older men, were worthy of double honor (I Timothy 5:17).

This may appear to be rather amazing to some readers. But whether a man was only an Elder, or an older man, or a preacher of The Word in need, all were worthy of double honor. Why is this? The answer is simple. Both were Elders or Firstborn older sons who had a right, according to The Law, to receive a double portion of honor. It is based on the principle in Deuteronomy 21:17. Remember, for Christians, The Law or Torah is only a shadow, or only a type of the real (Hebrews 10:1).

Whether the Elder was a preacher or not, according to The Law, both received financial help, but only when it was needed. Older men in need, and the older widows in need, also could receive financial help from The Church. This is plain and simple. I Timothy 5 deals with giving money to the ministry only when they were in need.

CHRIST'S ADMONITION

As usual, Jesus, Himself, tells you Scripturally how ministers are to be paid as "Laborers" of The Word.

In Luke 9, Jesus sent The Apostles out to do The Work of God. They were sent to preach The Gospel, heal the sick, and cast out demons. Then in Luke 9:3, Christ instructed the disciples to take nothing with them – not even money. Again, Jesus sent out another seventy in Luke 10. He told them not to take any purse, or money: **"Carry neither purse, nor scrip..."** (Luke 10:4).

Then in Luke 10:5-7, Christ told the disciples to find a house of peace, so they could lodge and eat there. Then Jesus stated the situation in the simplest of terms: **"The Labourer is worthy of his hire..."** (verse 7). How did this take place? It was by lodging with The Church Brethren and eating what they gave you with thanksgiving. That is how it was done in Christ's time.

Hence, there were no salaries, tithes, offerings, cars, houses, colleges, administration buildings, jet aircraft, etc. Christ said that a Minister

should be paid by staying with Church brethren and eating and drinking what the brethren offered. Jesus said that a Laborer is worthy of his hire by eating and drinking what is given – period! There was no salary, tithes, or donations. A Minister was to be totally helped financially, but only when he was in need. That is how God financed His Work, but only by need.

These needs can be satisfied for elders, ministers, or older men, widows (over sixty), or orphans. These are included along with “the poor in The Church.” In other words, God finances His Work by eliminating the need of basic necessities such as food, clothing, or a place to sleep.

I Corinthians 9 clearly states the situation when a minister has need for financial help when he preaches The Gospel. But it is only for eating and drinking – not a salary. The subject is eating and drinking (verse 4). This chapter in no way implies tithes or offerings. Then an illustration is given from Deuteronomy, which states: “...**Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn**” (verse 9).

Why does Paul use the example of not muzzling the ox that treads out the corn? It is so the ox can eat. He should share in the proceeds. Tithes are not the subject! Verse 13 also explains that the priests eat from the altar. This is an important principle. The priests eat the meat from the sacrifices.

Then, in verse 14, Paul states that Jesus said the same about preaching The Gospel. You read: “**Even so has the Lord ordained that they which**

preach the gospel should live of [Greek: “out of”] **the gospel.”** Yes, Christ said to eat and drink whatever the people of peace offer you. The entire history of true Christianity, from The Gospels through The Book of Acts, is about how financing God's Work is done – by helping the needy – so that no one in The Church (or ministry) lacks anything.

Some have offered an excuse to get money, and quote II Corinthians 11:8.

This is the text where The Apostle Paul explained how he had robbed wages from other churches. The problem here is the Greek word for “wages” – which in the English means a “soldier's daily rations.” Soldiers did not receive a salary. They received daily rations (eat and drink), and whatever spoils they received from a successful battle. That was compensation for special duress.

Also, soldiers had to have assistance, because they were not able to provide all materials necessary for their military mission. They could not grow their food, make their uniform, forge a sword, craft a shield, and train for war at their own expense. They needed help from a larger body of individuals – just as is read: “**...Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges?**” (I Corinthians 9:7).

All these points are further evidence that The Church only gave to The Ministry and the needy Church members. They were given food and drink as was needed. That is the reason Paul stated in I Corinthians 9:5 that when The Ministry was traveling for The Work, The Church could, if

necessary, supply their daily needs, along with their families, when traveling with them.

THE MINISTERIAL EXAMPLE

Did you know that Ministers especially, should labor with their hands? Why is this? Consider the following aspect. In I Corinthians 4:9-12 Paul said The Apostles are last in The Church. They are last because they are belittled, go hungry, are beaten, and must even labor by working with their hands. Apostles worked. Ministers worked and were directed to work by Paul. This became a point of Paul's defense against the false ministers in his discourse throughout II Corinthians – and especially in Chapter 11.

Furthermore, Paul explained in II Thessalonians 3:10 that any who did not work (including ministers), neither should they eat. There is to be no financial help from The Church. Who is Paul talking to? He speaks to the entire Church and The Ministry. Why include The Ministry?

Paul stated that if any Church member didn't work, then they should have nothing to do with that brother. Then in verses 7-10, Paul proclaimed that The Ministry did not eat anyone's bread, but wrought with labor night and day. He said that no one in The Church had to help The Ministers at all. Why was this? Verse 9 gives authority to receive food and drink from The Church, but The Ministry should work in order to be an example to The Church. Paul declared that The Church should help no one who could, but wouldn't work, especially The Ministry.

How does God finance The Work of God? Everyone in The Body of Christ works, including The Ministry. By so doing, you prove you are The Disciples of Christ because you love each other. When everyone works, there is enough for them and the needy. There should never be needy individuals in God's Church!

CHAPTER 8

WHY THE PRIESTHOOD TAKES TITHES

The previous chapter, “Financing God’s Work,” showed how The Scriptural Method of Christian giving is for Christians to be willing to give all that they have to one another. It involves much more than merely the giving of a tithe or an offering. Rather, Christian giving is based upon need. It does not concern ministerial salaries or other “perks.”

It has, also, been shown that each local congregation is responsible for the control of giving money to the needy. Whether this Gift goes to an orphan, widow over sixty, elder, or a minister of the word, or those in need, it becomes the responsibility of The Church to provide the basic necessities for life.

Most Christians know “the laborer is worthy of his hire” – as Christ has shown, it is only for basic necessities like food, shelter, clothing. These are expenses that have been incurred in performing a ministerial service.

The cost of these necessities was not to be borne by the provider of this service (the minister) but rather by the receiver of it (the congregation).

Included in this arrangement is that the minister must also labor with his hands, or work in other ways, to be an example to The Christians (I Thessalonians 3:6-9) – to be an example of production and physical service for the support of his immediate household (I Timothy 5:8).

SPIRITUAL GIFTS

Physical Gifts, received at birth, form the foundation for skills and abilities, which are developed later in life to provide the basis for a livelihood.

Spiritual Gifts, on the other hand, are different. Each has received a Spiritual Gift (sometimes more than one).

I Peter 4:10 As every man hath received the gift [Greek “Charisma,” “a gift”], even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

These gifts are listed in three primary places in The Bible:

I Corinthian 12:7-10 ⁷But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. ⁸For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; ⁹To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing

by the same Spirit; ¹⁰To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:

Ephesians 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

Romans 12:6-8 ⁶Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; ⁷Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching; ⁸Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

The purposes of these Gifts are:

Ephesians 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

In Matthew 10:1-8, Jesus is described as sending His disciples (verse 5) to The House of Israel (verse 6) to preach The Gospel of The Kingdom of

Heaven (verse 7). Before sending them, He gave them Spiritual Gifts: 1) Power to cast out unclean spirits, 2) Power to heal sickness and disease (verse 1).

Notice that in verse 8 Jesus said, “...**freely ye have received, freely give.**” Because they had received these Gifts freely, they should use them to serve others without charge. These Gifts – any and all Spiritual Gifts – are not for hire.

Other physical skills or physical abilities, which a Christian might have, could be exchanged for goods and services or for money – the basis for making a living in this world.

Spiritual Gifts are not obtained from any school, college or university, and a BA, MA or PhD degree does not signify the attainment of any Spiritual Gifts.

Notice verses 9 and 10:

Matthew 10:9-10 ⁹Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, ¹⁰Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.” [Greek “Trephe,” from Strong’s Concordance #5142; “nourishment” (literally or figuratively); by implication rations: -- “food, meat”].

The disciples were not to take any money or other necessities with them – they would be provided by those whom they visited or stayed with. But

notice that it was only the necessities – salaries, health care and pension plans, chauffeur-driven cars, and private jets are not part of the package – just food, a warm coat, comfortable shoes and a walking stick – their daily needs.

Many “ministers” today live in exalted splendor while those whom they claim to serve are burdened with crushing obligations to tithe and give generous offerings. If these “ministers” were truly ministers (i.e., servants) of God, they would:

1. Reject all salaries, homes, planes, cars, jets, etc.,
2. Get a job and work for a living, and
3. Begin to preach The Gospel from The Word of God.

WHY TITHING WAS INSTITUTED?

Why was tithing instituted? Furthermore, why is it only The Priesthood who could claim a right to receive tithes? On the surface, tithing seems to be a rather simple matter. Did you know that tithing gets right to the issue of whether or not you have really accepted Christ's Sacrifice? You can actually be transgressing The Law if you do not tithe according to the full instructions laid down in God's Word. If you tithe – but don't do it in the prescribed manner – then it is still a sin – believe it or not.

Whether through The Priesthood of Melchisedec or through The Aaronic

Priesthood (through Levi), both had a right to receive tithes from the people. This is all well and good.

On a Scriptural Basis, entirely too many people merely study the tithing issue on the surface – and therefore don't get to the root of the matter. Then, they tend to jump to a conclusion without all of the proper Biblical evidence having been gathered on the subject.

Yes, it is true that Abraham tithed to Melchisedec (Genesis 14:20). Jacob, also, promised to pay tithes (Genesis 28:22). Under Moses, The Aaronic Priesthood could also receive tithes (Hebrews 7:5-10). This is because tithing at that time was based upon a legal system that had been set up under God's direction. Therefore, if one chooses to tithe today, is there anything wrong with tithing to the ministry? This seems to be such a simple question – or is it?

THE INHERITANCE

Were you aware that tithing has a direct link to God's Purpose on earth? Tithing, from God's point of view, is a very serious "teaching." The problem is the abuse of God's Original Purpose for tithing. God's Work is an on-going effort to bring individuals to believe on Christ.

So Jesus, being in you, makes you eventually become a Son of God by Inheritance. Paul said: **"...Christ in you, the hope of glory:..."** (Colossians 1:27). Be sure to read all of Ephesians 1 where God promises

this Inheritance to you, so that you can become part of His Family. In short, tithing is directly tied to this Law of Inheritance.

PRIESTHOOD WITHOUT THE INHERITANCE

There is one vital Biblical text that specifically defines the responsibility of a priest:

“For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins:” (Hebrews 5:1).

The high priest's duty is to offer these Gifts and Sacrifices for the sins of humanity. This is The Biblical Purpose for The Priesthood. Once the sins are paid for, there is no further Purpose for The High Priest. This is according to God's Word. Once an individual repents, is baptized, and receives God's Holy Spirit, there is no reason for The Priesthood to intercede for one's sins. This is because Jesus has already interceded for mankind, and continues to do so while on God's right hand. There is no further need as Priest for Christ to continue making sacrifices. The one sacrifice by Jesus gave mankind their Inheritance.

Once your sins are forgiven, there is no need for a High Priest to offer Sacrifice for your sins. That is why Paul said in Hebrews 8:1-4, that if Jesus were on the earth, He would not be a priest after any order.

Paul went on to declare that there are priests on the earth after or according to The Law. They still have their sins and are without any Inheritance. These priests on earth, The Levites, are placed there for unconverted, unrepentant people. The Law is to bring them, inch-by-inch, deed-by-deed, as a schoolmaster, to Christ until finally a repentant person does not have to sacrifice. Christ already did (Galatians 3:24).

Notice how The Priesthood is based upon The Law or Torah. What does The Law say about receiving Tithes and The Priesthood?

TITHING AND THE LAW

Numbers 18:21 states that according to The Law, God has given the tithes to The Levites so they can serve Him in The Temple. Notice, it is given as an Inheritance. In verse 23, The Law commands that no other Inheritance is to be given to The Levites.

The tithe is The Inheritance that was given to The Priesthood. This is because they have no Inheritance in The Promised Land. Their “Rest” in the land is to serve in The Temple for the sins of the people – just as Paul said in Hebrews 5:1. So states The Law. Only Levites can receive tithes, because there is no Inheritance for them.

ABRAHAM AND JACOB

Paul declares that all High Priests who are ordained have this rite performed for things pertaining to God. This is so they may offer both

Gifts and Sacrifices for sins (Hebrews 5:1). When did this practice begin? It started with Cain and Abel. Because Abel had a right heart, he was acceptable to God. Cain was told that he had a wrong heart, and therefore, he must master the sin within him. This was so he could be acceptable, as Abel had been accepted. To give sacrifices, Abel was God's First accepted High Priest to give a sacrifice, but he was murdered before he could perform those duties.

Melchisedec was God's High Priest, to give sacrifices for sins. That is what your Bible states. Since Melchisedec comes from two Hebrew words meaning "king" and "prosperous," it stands to reason that Abraham tithed to Melchisedec. God is The One who gives blessings, and prospered Abraham. Abraham did so because he knew that Melchisedec was The High Priest of The Most High God.

This Scripturally demonstrates that tithes are only given to those individuals without The Inheritance – or God's Promise of The Seed who would Restore all things (Genesis 3:15). Since The Law of Tithing was not in force for another 430 years, why did Abraham give this tithe?

First, it was given as a sign or a witness that Abraham only relied on God for his prosperity, which takes faith. Abraham's prosperity did not come from the spoils of war. And, remember, no one had received The Inheritance of The Promised Seed (The Messiah). To give a tithe to any High Priest after one has already received The Promise (God's guarantee) of God's blessings is to show a lack of Faith in your Father. You are literally rejecting God's Holy Spirit of The Promise.

In Hebrews 11:9-10, Abraham, The Father of The Faithful, received not his Inheritance – but rather he looked forward to The Promise of God’s Kingdom. That is why Abraham tithed to Melchisedec. No Inheritance had been given. The Inheritance is a promise of all that God is, with all of the riches in Christ. Abraham had to look forward to that Inheritance. He had total Faith to show the source of his prosperity. That is the reason Abraham tithed.

Jacob knew the same Biblical Truth. He tithed to God as his protector – and The God of all riches. Jacob, also, had not received his Inheritance, and therefore, tithed, just as did Abraham. This was a Witness to the world.

INHERITANCE: KEY TO TITHING

As The Law states, only those High Priests who have no Inheritance could receive tithes. This is true, whether in reference to Melchisedec or Levi. One is a Spiritual Priesthood (Melchisedec) – and the other is a Physical Priesthood (Levi). Tithes can only be paid to them since they have no Inheritance.

In The Law, The Levites (Numbers 18:20-21) were given the tithe because they had no promise in the land. If tithes are given or taken by someone who has received their Inheritance, they are transgressing The Law, and that is sin (I John 3:4). If you break one point of The Law, you are guilty of breaking The Entire Law (James 2:10). There is no Scriptural way around it.

CHRIST AND CHRISTIANITY

It is beyond consideration that one cannot tithe to any Priesthood (Levi or Melchisedec) if they have inherited God's Promise. Receiving a tithe, or giving a tithe, is an act of Faith that one has not received their Inheritance. Abraham, Jacob, and all the Fathers had not received The Inheritance until the children of Israel received their Inheritance in The Promised Land. The Levites were excluded from this Promise of The Land, and therefore, could receive tithes.

In Hebrews 1:2, Paul said that Jesus had inherited all things. This was God's complete Glory. Christ, as Priest after The Order of Melchisedec, could not receive any tithes once He was Resurrected, and is sitting at God's right hand. Neither can Christ's ministers take tithes. Why is this? Besides Jesus, His ministers and all Christians have received, at least, an earnest (down payment) of their Inheritance.

Ephesians 1:13-14 infallibly states that Christians, once sealed with God's Holy Spirit, have the earnest of their Inheritance. Jesus and all Christians have received an Inheritance. Once The Inheritance has been received, no tithes should be accepted by any Priesthood, Levite, or Melchisedec, because they do not need to Witness their future prosperity. Christ and all true Christians have received their Heavenly Blessings in Christ (Ephesians 1:3). To keep tithing, once a person has received The Inheritance, is a lack of Faith. Lacking Faith is a sin (Romans 14:23).

Too many treat tithing lightly. Tithing carries a deep Spiritual lesson that

illustrates how one has not received their Inheritance. To give tithes in any way, or for any purpose, is a complete lack of Faith in God. Abraham and Jacob tithed because they had not received their Inheritance. This was an act of Faith by them illustrating how they were sure they would receive it.

Christ and Christians who have received The Inheritance show their Faith by not taking or giving tithes. This is a very deep Spiritual lesson. That is why God said that Abraham kept His Commandments, Laws, and Statutes. It was Abraham's Faith, which was his righteousness (Genesis 26:5). Christians likewise walk in Faith by living every Word of God (Matthew 4:4).

CHRISTIAN GIVING

You have already seen the earlier facts and factors in Chapter 7: How God Finances His Work. Christian giving is based completely on need, and not on any tithes. In fact, Christians are supposed to be willing to give everything they have to the needy – when that is necessary. This guideline especially applies to The Body of Christ (The Church). Carefully read Chapters 3, 4, and 5 of Acts.

Paul said that Christians should be willing to offer their bodies as a living Sacrifice (Romans 12:1). Since Jesus is your Sacrifice, you should be a willing Sacrifice like Christ – and give everything for the needy. One of the major Truths about God's Church is that there should be no poor in this body of believers. This is God's Spiritual Welfare System – brother

helping brother. Tithing is not enough. It is only for those who need a priest to make constant intercession for their sins by Sacrifices. That is the reason Christ would not be a Priest if He were on earth today (Hebrews 8:4).

During The Millennium, Jesus will reign as King of Kings in Israel. At that time, The Israelites who have not entered God's Rest (Hebrews 4) or Inheritance, will be required to follow The Complete Letter of The Law – including tithing. Israel and the unconverted Gentiles will have their chance to come to Christ.

All who have not Repented and have not received God's Inheritance will have their opportunity to come to Christ. Once they are Repentant, The Letter of The Law will no longer apply to them. Consequently, they will not tithe because the Repentant will become Christians and have their Inheritance of Christ in them (Colossians 1:27). Tithing will completely cease when all have received their Inheritance.

CHAPTER 9

WHAT OR WHO WAS MELCHISEDEC?

Abraham paid tithes to Melchisedec, who was The High Priest of The Most High God, and then He blessed Abraham. Who was this Melchisedec, and why did he bless Abraham (Hebrews 7:1)? The answer will surprise you.

AN ORDER

Many assume that Melchisedec was a single human being. Some believe that The Melchisedec who blessed Abraham was Christ. Could this be true? Due to a common error, most misunderstand the true identity of Melchisedec. People assume that Melchisedec is just one individual person. But what does The Bible actually say?

When Abraham met Melchisedec, The Bible states, that this Melchisedec was The High Priest of The Most High God. This statement in The Book of Genesis reveals the fact that there were other high priests in existence – but they were not priests of The Most High God (Genesis 14:16).

You will see, on a Biblical basis, that Melchisedec was not one person –

but rather a lineage of individuals from the time of Adam and Eve down to the time when Christ came – who was, also, a Priest after The Order of Melchisedec (Hebrews 7:21). To understand this Order of Melchisedec, you must first come to see why God had instituted a priesthood in the first place. The answer to this mysterious, puzzling question will reveal the entire story line and underlying theme of The Bible.

THE PRIESTHOOD

The Apostle Paul clearly states the reason God has ordained The Office of a Priest – especially The High Priest of God.

In Hebrews 5:1 Paul said: “**For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins:...**”

Notice God's requirements for The High Priesthood:

1. A high priest must be human.
2. This high priest must be ordained of God.

The word “ordain” in the Greek is “kathistemi,” which means “to set down” or “place in a position.” God makes this appointment personally. It is accomplished by His established Law or by an oath.

3. The Purpose and duty of the high priest is for the good of humanity. It makes Christians acceptable to God.

4. For God to accept a sinner, a sacrifice or gift must be given. Otherwise, God will not accept the sinner (Isaiah 59:1-2).

5. These sacrifices and gifts must be acceptable by God because God is the one ordaining the individual to become His High Priest.

It is not the gift or sacrifice that is of significance – but rather the acceptance of the human who is chosen to be high priest. Please read all of Psalm 139. David said: “²³**Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts:** ²⁴**And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.”**

God knows the thoughts and hearts of each of His creation, and therefore, He chooses those who are to become High Priests according to the heart of the individual.

Then, in Hebrews 10:5, Paul makes an amazing statement. He says: “**Wherefore when he [Christ] cometh into the world, he [David] saith, Sacrifice and offering [and burnt offering for sin] thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:...**” Paul quoted this statement from David’s Psalm 40:6. In fact, in David’s Psalm, David declared that God doesn’t even desire sacrifices or offerings, but rather the human body, The Christ, which God prepared. Please read this Psalm completely for the value of the content.

How significant this is. God is not the one who introduced sacrifices and offerings. This process all started by means of human effort. That is why

Paul said that The Law with all its Commandments were carnal commandments which were done by humans to please God. But, they never could accomplish that objective. Only the offering of the body of Jesus, The Christ, would suffice. This is because Christ loved righteousness – and was chosen above his fellows (Hebrews 7:16 and Hebrews 1:9). You will see that, these fellows, referred to in Hebrews 1, cover the human genealogy from Cain and Able until Christ, The “Anointed One.” Jesus is the aim or completion of the Line of Melchisedec.

Read all of Hebrews 1 thoroughly. Paul related how Jesus is superior to The Angels and because Christ loved righteousness by giving His very life, became God's Son and The High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec.

Since God's real Temple is in Heaven, some Jewish writings state Melchisedec might have been The Archangel, Michael, in Heaven. Jesus, therefore, is The One who was The Completion of The Melchisedec Order and is finally chosen above “his fellows” on earth and in Heaven.

The Greek meaning for “Christ” denotes “The Anointed One,” or “Melchisedec, The Chosen One” (Hebrews 1).

GENESIS OF THE PRIESTHOOD

How did the priesthood begin and when did this take place? Now that you know the *why* and *how* of God deciding His priesthood, you need to

investigate the history of the priesthood – for both Melchisedec and The Levitical Priesthood from the time of Moses. To know the purpose of each order is significant in relation to Salvation.

After Adam and Eve sinned in The Garden of Eden, they were removed from The Garden and The Tree of Life. The cherubim (angels) guarded the way to The Tree of Life – just like the two cherubim that guarded the way to The Mercy Seat of The Ark placed in The Temple. Humanity was cut off from God until that special body which God prepared had been offered – and the veil of the Temple was rent – so that mercy could be obtained from God, The Father.

In The Land of Eden, Adam and Eve had two children – Cain and Abel. Cain was the firstborn, which gave him the right of the firstborn (Deuteronomy 21:17). Later, you will see when Cain killed Abel, the struggle had been over the priesthood.

Cain had a wrong heart. In Genesis 4:7, God simply told Cain, **“If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted?”** If Cain’s heart were right, God would have accepted his offering. For God to accept Cain’s offering, he had to have a right heart to be able to perform the role of the priesthood.

Then God said, **“...and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule [master or repent] over him”** (Genesis 4:7). God wanted Cain to change his attitude and his ways. Instead, Cain murdered his brother Abel, and consequently, was

expelled from God's presence. The result was that he became a pagan who was a man without God.

Remember that the punishment for Eve's sin was that the restoration to God's rest (in The Garden) would not occur until the right seed came along (Genesis 3:15). This promised seed would defeat Satan, and restore humanity (Eve's seed) to God. Cain and Abel both knew this, and therefore, both tried to please God with their offerings.

Now, notice how God made His choice. Once again, The Apostle, Paul, reveals The Truth. The Book of Hebrews is the priesthood epistle. In Hebrews 11:2, the Apostle explains that these individuals were all elders, or the older men of God. They were all faithful, and had direct instruction from God.

Then in the text of Hebrews 11:4, it is clear that Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain. As a gift, this sacrifice represented more honor to God. It was a witness that Abel's gift was more righteous. This meant that since God accepted Abel's sacrifice as more righteous than Cain's, then Abel was to become the one who God accepted as His High Priest. Abel would be the one to offer sacrifices for sin.

Abel fulfilled all of the requirements for becoming God's High Priest in the process of giving sacrifice for sin. Abel was to become the first human to be accepted, chosen, and ordained of God. He would offer acceptable sacrifice to God.

Although the lamb pointed to Christ, God was not promoting the idea of animal sacrifice. Rather, God wanted a particular body – as has already been shown. But, Abel’s faith of righteousness was the cause of Abel’s worth in becoming God’s High Priest. His mother, Eve, understood this reality, also.

REPLACEMENT BY SETH

In Genesis 4:25-26, you find that Eve conceived Seth. This was the son who replaced the slain Abel. In this text, Eve made a critical statement: **“...God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew.”** This seed would be the seed that would defeat Satan and the penalty of sin that had been brought upon Eve and her progeny.

In the Hebrew language, the word, “appointed” means “strength.” This is the same principle and meaning as applied to the firstborn in Deuteronomy 21:17. The word comes from a root in the Hebrew which means “chief” or “head.”

Seth was the new head who was installed as the firstborn to replace Cain – who himself became a wanderer, and secondly to replace Abel who was killed. In this process, The Priesthood’s Promised Seed was to come through Seth, who would be the one to offer gifts and sacrifices to God for sin. Seth became God’s High Priest. Notice the genealogy in the book of Genesis.

In Genesis 5:1-3, God said that He made man, Adam, in God's image or likeness. Adam looked like God. In verse 3, it states that Adam's son was Seth – and that Seth looked like Adam. There is no more mention of Cain or Abel. The genealogy of The Promised Seed, who finally would be Christ, was now to take place through Seth – who looked like Adam, who, in turn, looked like God.

Therefore, Seth looked like God – or a Son of God. This is very significant to The Priesthood of Melchisedec. The English translation of the word “like” in Hebrew refers to “character” or “righteousness.” The very name of “Melchisedec” means “King of Righteousness.”

DEFINITION OF MELCHISEDEC

The Apostle Paul leaves an excellent clarification of what and who Melchisedec was. Please read all of Hebrews 7:1-4. Study each morsel and compare Paul's definition to what has already been proved. Following is a list of Paul's descriptive points concerning Melchisedec, who met Abraham.

1. Melchisedec was The King of Salem.
2. He was The Priest of The Most High God.
3. He was, also, King of Righteousness, and as King of Salem, this meant King of Peace.
4. He had neither father nor mother.

5. He had no beginning or ending of life. He was eternal.
6. He was made like The Son of God, or Jesus.
7. He abides as a priest forever.
8. He was a man, or a human being.

WAS MELCHISEDEC CHRIST?

It is a very simple matter to take Paul's definition of Melchisedec, to see if Melchisedec was actually Christ. It is true that when Jesus became Melchisedec, He was The King of Salem and King of Peace. Jesus did become The High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec. Christ was, also, King of Righteousness. Furthermore, Jesus abides as a Priest forever. Christ was the target or completion of The Melchisedec Order. Everyone on earth and Heaven were only types or shadows of The Real.

Besides this, Christ was a man – or human. Jesus, The Christ, certainly did qualify with many of God's requirements to become God's High Priest. But was He, The Melchisedec, who met Abraham? Remember, to be Melchisedec who met Abraham, one had to meet the complete definition that Paul had enumerated.

One major point reveals how this Melchisedec had no father or mother. Jesus did have a Father, who is God – and Mary, as His mother. Some could say: "but this was before Jesus was born as a human." If that were so, then how could Jesus become Melchisedec – once God had begotten

Him as a Son? In fact, according to Paul, Jesus became Melchisedec because He was God's first begotten Son.

Notice, Paul's statement in Hebrews 7:15 that Jesus was not Melchisedec who met Abraham – but was only after the similitude of Melchisedec. He only arose as a High Priest, later on. So Christ could not have been The Melchisedec who met Abraham. Jesus became Melchisedec only after He became God's first begotten Son.

Hebrews 5:5-6 reveals that until Christ became God's Son, He did not become High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec. Verse 5, tells you that Jesus did not glorify Himself to become High Priest. But then, God said that Christ was His Firstborn Son – and therefore, in verse 6, God said that Jesus was a Priest forever after The Order of Melchisedec. In Hebrews 7:15 Melchisedec, who met Abraham, was only in the similitude of Christ. It wasn't Jesus. Both came from the same genealogical lineage.

In the Greek language, the original word translated as “similitude” conveys the meaning of “compared,” “to become like,” or to “resemble.” It also comes from the Greek root of “similar in appearance” or “character.”

Melchisedec, who met Abraham, was not Jesus, The Christ. They were just alike in various ways. Hebrews 7:3 states that Melchisedec, who met Abraham, was like unto The Son of God – but he was not Jesus. If he wasn't Christ, then who was he?

THE ORDER

Throughout Hebrews, the text clearly states that Jesus became High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec – just as was read in Hebrews 5:5-6. The Melchisedec of Abraham’s day (and of Christ’s appointment) were two different men.

It all concerns the word “Melchisedec” as being “an order” or “a lineage” from a specific family, or the same DNA. This is especially true concerning righteous character. The High Priest must be a lover of righteousness. So it is “an order” – and not just a specific person.

The words “after the order” in its strictest Greek sense, carries the meaning of “after” – which “equals the goal or aim that comes down from something to something.” The word “after” in the Greek language connotes “a target to something.” The goal or target is the order. The word “order” in the Greek is “taxis,” which means “to arrange in order,” “categorize,” or “place in one’s proper place.”

The Order of Melchisedec is an arrangement or succession that takes place towards a proper goal. So, Melchisedec is not a person or a separate being, but rather a genealogy of inheritance from God. That is the root of misunderstanding. When one thinks of Melchisedec, as one individual being, they have made a great Biblical error.

The “order” (succession) must meet all the eight requirements to be Melchisedec. To be Melchisedec, one had to love righteousness and be

King of Peace (Salem). Only, The Christ, qualified by being The Body God chose as a Sacrifice. Therefore, they would be God's High Priest. Also, in this order (succession) they would have no father or mother – nor beginning or end – because they are all part of a lineage, which ends with Christ (which lasts forever).

The individuals, in this order of succession, had no beginning, because Christ was God's Son – and He came from God who had no beginning. They had to be like The Son of God, in genealogy and character. Jesus, and all predecessors had to be humans. All, in their order, abide as a priest through Christ forever. This genealogical order fulfills all the conditions to become Melchisedec ending in Christ.

Once one understands the name of Melchisedec is a title, which connotes a succession of human beings from the time of Cain and Abel, then one starts to realize that it is God's Promised Seed (progeny) all through history who are The Called-Out Ones, The Church. This started with Abel's replacement. Then, from Seth, it continued all the way down to Jesus, The Christ.

The target (goal) of finalizing God's High Priest in The Order of Melchisedec is finally completed in Christ – just as with The Torah or The Law with The Aaronic Priesthood. In both cases, The Melchisedec Order and The Aaronic Order was a priesthood, which had been appointed by God.

The Melchisedec Order was determined by an oath made by God to His

Firstborn Son, Jesus. The Aaronic Order was mandated by The Law. Both priesthoods had to make an offering (sacrifice) for sin. As long as the sacrifice was accepted, then they were both High Priests of The Most High God!

THE TWO PRIESTHOODS

Why did God find it necessary to have two priesthoods: one Melchisedec and the other as Aaronic through Levi? Wasn't Melchisedec good enough? After all, The Melchisedec Priesthood was set up to offer sacrifices for the sins of humanity – in order to make them acceptable to God. Christ came as that body which God had prepared for the world's sins (I John 4:14). It was after The Order of Melchisedec.

Why wasn't this one priesthood of Melchisedec enough to restore Adam and Eve's children to God's rest or paradise (Matthew 18:11)? Remember, God told Cain for him to be accepted, he had to master sin and repent. Jesus clearly stated the same thing in Matthew 13:15.

A MATTER OF REPENTENCE

Now, for an overall perspective that is most important, you read the statement made by Jesus:

“For this people’s heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear

**with their ears, and should understand with their heart
and should be converted, and I should heal them”
(Matthew 13:15).**

Christ said it, and God certainly told Cain the same thing. These are as the prescribed “two witnesses” according to God’s Law. The Priesthood of Melchisedec only covered the repentant or faithful people who would always believe every Word of God (Matthew 4:4). Faith, or complete belief in God, Our Father, is righteousness and fulfills all The Law culminating in love to God and your neighbor.

ABRAHAM TITHED

Why did Abraham tithes to Melchisedec? It was not because any Law required it, but as you will see, it was because it proved Abraham’s faithfulness to God. It was Abraham’s faith which made Abraham righteous – and not any works of The Law (Hebrews 11:8-10).

WHAT TITHES REPRESENT

According to The Law, The Levitical Priesthood takes tithes (one tenth) from the people because it is to be their Inheritance for their service in The Tabernacle. Why does God pay The Levites ten percent of the people’s agricultural earnings for their services in The Tabernacle.

Numbers 18:1 reveals that the duties of The Levites are to bear the sins of the people (and themselves) by means of the sacrifices. Remember that

Melchisedec was a Spiritual Priesthood based upon faith and belief. To be covered by Melchisedec, one had to repent – which means to have a change of heart – and then to have faith (belief) in all of God's Word.

Notice, in Hebrews 3:18 when referring to Israel, God said they would not enter God's rest because Israel lacked faith (belief) in God. They hadn't repented because of a lack of faith, and therefore, The Melchisedec Priesthood could not give sacrifices for them. This was because The Order of Melchisedec was a Spiritual Priesthood based on faith.

There was another priesthood, which could not forgive their sins, but only demanded death when the people were guilty of capital sins or crimes. It was an Administration of Death (II Corinthians 3:5-9). That is why God had to add The Statutes and Judgments to The Ten Commandments, because their hearts were unrepentant (Deuteronomy 5:29). Malachi 4:4 clearly states The Law of Moses did not include The Statutes and Judgments until they were added to The Ten Commandments (Deuteronomy 5 and Acts 7) after Israel sinned. Before Israel sinned, God only gave The Ten Commandments as The Law of Moses.

These Statutes and Judgments were laws by which Israel was judged in God's Courthouse, The Tabernacle, and Temple (be sure to reread Chapter 4 on *God's Judgment*). They were added for judgment of death or life, blessings or cursings. There was no mercy in this administration because the people were hardhearted and unrepentant. That is why God had to give them The Letter of The Law to judge them without mercy (Exodus 23:20-21 and I Timothy 1:4-9).

This Added Law of Statutes and Judgments was The Law that was part of The Torah which judged them in God's Courthouse or Temple. Read the chapter about The Purpose of The Temple.

TITHES PAY THE LAWYER

Now, prepare for a great Spiritual surprise! God does not pay for the sinners' defense unless they repent. You will see Scripturally that tithing is God's insurance tax that pays the lawyers' fees for unrepentant people in God's Court. Since no inheritance is given to The Levite, they are without a source of income from the inherited land (agricultural).

The Levitical Priesthood had no other career besides being a defense attorney service. By Israel breaking The Commandments, Statutes, and Judgments, the tithes paid were for the legal fees given to The Priests for defending the sinner, so to speak. This was for settling, out of court, by means of sacrifices. It is that simple. God is logical and has complete common sense.

Israel could not stop sinning (committing crimes) because they did not have a heart inclined toward God. God knew they would continue to break His Commandments, Statutes, and Judgments.

God demanded that The Israelites pay their defense attorneys' fees by having tithes cover their legal fees. Their defense attorneys, The Priests, had no other inheritance – or source of income.

It is Scripturally clear that The Levitical Priesthood had to be instituted

because Israel was carnal – and couldn't keep The Letter of The Law. It had to be because they had the weakness of the flesh, with no repentance (Hebrews 3:10 and Romans 9:8). They lacked the faith or trust in God, Their Father.

COURTHOUSE AND ATTORNEYS' FEES

As The Bible states, most of Israel today is blinded (Romans 11:7). Their time of Salvation and being forgiven by The Priesthood of Melchisedec will be during The Millennium (Romans 11:25-16). Under The Order of Melchisedec, Christ as your defense attorney (mediator) is **“freely given, and freely received”** (Matthew 10:8 and Hebrews 9:8-15). Christ, as your defense attorney, does not charge you.

In the Greek language, the word “mesitites” is translated into the English as “mediator.” The Greek defines it as being “one who mediates between two parties.” Moses did this on behalf of Israel when God wanted to kill Israel. With Moses, as Israel's attorney, God gave life to Israel on the basis that their penalty would be to give them The Letter of The Law. The intent was that they would be judged without mercy or pardon – in order to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24).

During The Millennium, when The Law brings Israel to Christ and Israel has belief (faith) in God, the people will receive mercy and forgiveness under The Order of Melchisedec – or Christ. Christ is your defense attorney for free. It is by grace that you are Saved (pardoned) in God's Court or Temple (Romans 3:24).

No tithes or offerings are to be given. If you, as a Christian, tithe or give offerings, then you are paying your attorney fees instead of God giving you grace by and through your attorney, who is pro bono (free) for your defense under The Priesthood of Melchisedec.

God did not merely charge Israel for their attorneys' fees – but God, also, imposed insurance to pay for the use of The Courthouse (Temple). This was a fee of a shekel (read all of Numbers 3). God replaced the firstborn of Israel (who are sanctified for a Holy Purpose) with The Levites who are sanctified for a Holy Purpose. They are the ones who serve in The Temple or Courthouse of God.

The firstborn are sanctified by God to serve in The Priesthood of Melchisedec – just as Christ was God's Firstborn Son. Therefore, God ordained Christ as a Priest after The Order of Melchisedec (Hebrews 5:5-6). This made it possible for God to ordain a second priesthood after The Law.

This second priesthood was subject to The Law without mercy for carnal people. They did not have a right heart. That is the reason God called The Letter of The Law and its legal requirements a carnal commandment (Hebrews 7:15-16). It is carnal because they have no heart or conscience. This legal law in The Temple was for unconverted people. They were to be judged as people who couldn't stop sinning or committing crimes. Therefore, this Court had no mercy. The people were weak in their flesh.

How great is God's justice! How righteous. Prove how God has two

courts, one on earth by The Levites, which was only a figure (type) of God's real court, and The Temple in heaven with Christ as High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec (Chapter IV).

Read all of Hebrews 9. God's earthly court (with no mercy) had Laws to prove that humans are too weak to keep them, and therefore, are guilty and subject to being put to death (Romans 6:23). Under The Priesthood of Melchisedec, God judges carnal people differently from converted people

It was, therefore, necessary for God to have two priesthoods. The Order of Melchisedec was a Priesthood under grace (forgiveness) for free – there were no costs.

CHRISTIAN REQUIREMENT?

Christians are not required to give tithes or offerings to a ministry, priesthood, or to anyone. Christians are like their Savior, Christ, and consequently sacrifice their whole life. They give all for the needy – whether the widow in need, the elder man who is poor, the minister of the word who is in need, or anyone in The Body of Christ who is in need.

To tithe or to give any offering is to be paying for your defense by a mediator or attorney. You are then paying for your Salvation. It is no longer Grace or free. Since Jesus is your defense as your mediator, His service is totally free – or else you deny that you are Saved by Grace. You do not have to pay for your crimes (sins) as carnal Israel did under The Law with all its demands.

Now, you are ready to understand why Abraham paid tithes to Melchisedec. And, why Jacob paid tithes, as well. Remember that Christ said the guilty must pay the last farthing (Matthew 5:26).

THE INHERITANCE

You have proved that God only allows tithes to be given to those who do not have an Inheritance. Why is The Inheritance so important? The entire theme or story of your Bible is about God's Plan of Restoring The Garden of Eden and The Tree of Life to Adam and Eve's progeny (Genesis 3:15). It all comes through Eve's children of The Promised Seed – or the order (genealogy) of her children who are righteous, by faith through Christ.

This is what Genesis to Revelation is all about. It concerns the restored Tree of Life in Paradise which occurs in the last chapter of Revelation 22. God's Story begins in The Garden and ends in The Garden. It is Alpha and Omega.

Without Melchisedec, there is no Salvation. It is all about an Inheritance of the complete wealth and riches in Christ from God, Our Father. That is why The Inheritance is so important and must be given freely (by grace). There is no payment by any Law – for your defense of your sins – just as with carnal Israel and the rest of the unconverted world. It must be completely and totally free – or else Salvation and forgiveness of your sins against God will not be forgiven. That is what Job had to learn. Now, you can understand why Abraham and Jacob tithed.

After Abraham defeated Lot's captives and he had obtained all the spoils of war, he took nothing. He only gave ten percent (a tithe) to Melchisedec. In truth, Abraham gave all that he had – just as a Christian does for those in need. Had Abraham taken more than the 10% he gave to Melchisedec, the defeated kings and their people would have been destitute. As real Christians do, Abraham was concerned about their needs instead of his own. When Abraham gave the ten percent to Melchisedec, he had nothing remaining from his victory. He totally relied on God for his prosperity.

Since Abraham had not received his Inheritance of The Promised Seed yet, he gave the tithe to show that he had the faith to wait for his Inheritance when Christ comes and restores God to humanity. Abraham knew his sins still had not been paid for by Christ. Read Hebrews 11 entirely. It explains why Abraham tithed to Melchisedec. He had not received his Inheritance yet, and in Faith (Hebrews 11) looked forward to it.

The Law of Inheritance is one of the most critical Spiritual lessons in The Bible. Without receiving The Inheritance, you are without God's Holy Spirit – and are cut off from God. When a Christian tithes or gives offerings, a person is denying their mediator (defense attorney), Jesus, The Christ.

Your High Priest does not charge for your freedom. You are no longer under Grace if you tithe, and therefore, receive no Inheritance. How vital and important it is to know what and who Melchisedec was. This is

critical when considering your Salvation. Thankfully, true Christians are Saved by Grace, and need to pay no tax (fees) for defense (forgiveness) of sins.

SHEM'S HISTORY

Melchisedec was fulfilled in one time period by Noah's son, Shem. He was the one who continued The High Priesthood from Noah when he died. Shem was the one who blessed Abraham since he was the one to receive the promises of Eve's seed (Christ).

Abraham would now restore what was lost (paradise) with The Tree of Life (Matthew 18:11). That is why Melchisedec blessed Abraham. It is because Abraham believed in faith – that God, alone, would prosper him with all the riches in Christ (Hebrews 11 and Ephesians 2:4-8).

Keep in mind that The Melchisedec Priesthood was not one person, but “An Order” (genealogy) of Eve's seed who had a right to sacrifice for the sins of the people. Melchisedec, as “An Order,” had no father or mother or descent. It was a Priesthood to continue until The Promised Seed, Christ, came as The Body prepared by God to Save the world (I John 4:14). There was no father or mother because this Seed was chosen by Righteousness and Faith. Those in line for Melchisedec were bypassed if they were not righteous. An example is Cain.

This Priesthood came directly from God, through His Son, Jesus, who was God's firstborn. Through Christ, this Priesthood lasts forever. It has no

beginning since it started from God who has no beginning. This priesthood was not temporary as The Aaronic Priesthood – which came by The Law, and was only a shadow of the true everlasting priesthood (Hebrews 10:1). Therefore, it is essential to prove that Shem was the one chosen by God after the flood – and that Shem was alive when Melchisedec met Abraham.

THE LINEAGE

After the flood, Noah had three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth (Genesis 9:1). Two of the sons, Japheth and Ham, were eliminated by God from receiving the blessing and riches. Read verses 26-29, and find that the blessing goes to Shem when Noah dies. God chose the line of The Promised Seed by means of righteousness, just as Christ was chosen (Hebrews 1:8-9).

Shem was now Melchisedec, The High Priest. But did he live long enough? Going on with the text in Genesis 10:21-22, Shem had five children: Elam, Asshur, Arphaxed, Lud and Aram. Now, prepare for a surprise.

Shem's genealogy, also, continues in Genesis 11:10. In that text, it specifies the generations of Shem. Four of Shem's children: Elam, Asshur, Lud and Aram are not even listed. Why not? Shem's lineage starts two years after the flood when Shem was one hundred years old. The text mentions the generation of Shem through Arphaxed, but not the

other four. Why is this? Verse 11 reveals that Shem lived another five hundred years – for a total of six hundred years.

You will see, by Shem having lived six hundred years, he outlived Abraham. Shem was still alive when Melchisedec blessed Abraham. This lineage is not Shem's total genealogy, but only the genealogy through Arphaxed, Shem's son, to the birth of Terah, Abraham's father.

This lineage reveals the continuity of the seed line of The Promised Seed from Shem to Abraham. That is why Shem, as Melchisedec, blessed Abraham, as the one to receive The Abrahamic Covenant. This Covenant was Promised by grace, as a gift because of Abraham's faith. Genesis 12 to Genesis 25 covers all of Abraham's life – until his death, listed in Genesis 25:7.

Abraham was 175 years old when he died. Shem still had about twenty-five years ahead of him. So the blessing was upon Shem and his lineage through Abraham. Shem, as Melchisedec, blessed (confirmed) God's oath of The Abrahamic Covenant – that the riches in Christ would come through Abraham. How perfect and wonderful God is.

THE PATRIARCH

Hebrews 11:7 states that Noah, by his faith, became the heir of righteousness. Noah continued The Order of Melchisedec. The Inheritance of Eve's seed continues with Noah. In verse 6, Hebrews

reveals that without faith it is impossible to please God. If faith exists, then God rewards those who diligently seek Him.

Now, in verse 8, the text states that Abraham was to receive the promised inheritance of prosperity (riches) by faith. Even though Shem outlived Abraham, as Melchisedec, the blessed son of Noah, the heir, God was now transferring the blessings upon Shem to Abraham. This took place even though Shem outlived Abraham. Amazing!

That is why Melchisedec blessed Abraham, and Abraham gave the tithe to Melchisedec. This acknowledged that Abraham believed God – and that Abraham and his seed would now receive The Inheritance, which Abraham did not obtain in his lifetime. That is faith (Hebrews 11:13)!

From this point on, Melchisedec (Shem) is not mentioned. The blessing has been transferred from Shem who continued to live after Abraham's death. The genealogy, however, of the blessing of The Promised Seed goes on through Abraham to Isaac, to Jacob, then to Israel, who sinned at Mt. Sinai. This is when Israel had to receive The Letter of The Law for judgment to death, in order to bring them to Christ. Israel, being carnal, required another Priesthood, Levitical, based on The Letter of The Law to bring them to death and Repentance.

From this point on, Israel had to be judged carnally by a carnal commandment (Hebrews 7:15). This was by a shadow of the real priesthood, Melchisedec, which gives Life. The Aaronic Priesthood could

only remind them of sin and by The Law could only produce death (II Corinthians 3:9).

The body prepared by God, still had to come through Christ. This was the restoration of the true (better) Priesthood, which gave Life Eternal – and all its riches. This was by Grace and was totally free!

IDENTITY OF A PATRIARCH

Now, Abraham and his lineage were to continue The Promise. Abraham was now The Patriarch. Read what Paul said in Hebrews 7:4, **“Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.”** Abraham was a patriarch. What is a patriarch?

The Greek, “patriarchea,” refers to a “progenitor.” This is “a beginner” or “starter.” It includes two Greek terms, “patria” and arkho.” “Patria” denotes a “family,” “tribe” or “nation.” “Patria” would be “the father” or “progenitor” of the family, tribe, or nation. “Arkho” equates to “being first” or “a father.”

The patriarch is a starter, or a progenitor of a family, tribe, or nation. That is exactly what God promised Abraham in The Covenant. Abraham was to be a father of many nations through whom The Promised Seed (Christ) would come to bless all nations on earth. This is what The Order of Melchisedec was all about.

Hebrews 7:4 declares that this man, a human (and not Christ), was so great that Abraham gave him a tithe. A tithe could only be given when one doesn't have The Inheritance – as in the case of The Levitical Priesthood. This was a total act of faith by Abraham as has already been proved. Why was Melchisedec so great that by tithing to him – God would prosper Abraham in all riches?

MELCHISEDEC, THE RIGHTEOUS

The word, “Melchisedec,” comes from two Hebrew terms, “Malkey” and “Tsedaq.” “Malkey” originates from “Meleck,” which is a “king or royal.” “Hammeleck,” is “a pagan king” or “Meleck,” which is the Sun King or Melchisedec – the King of The Most High God.

There were many molecks (or kings) in the earth – but not after God. That is why God hated the Israelites for worshipping Moleck, the Sun King, rather than The True God. Melchisedec was a king, but he was entirely different from the pagan kings in the world. Falsely, these pagan kings claimed to be true king-priests over their nations.

All anyone would need to do is to read world history about India, China, Aztecs, etc. There were many “priest kings” in the world but none were the King-priest of The Most High God. These false king-priests claimed to be the protector and provider of riches to these peoples. That is what Nimrod claimed. What is the difference when compared with The King-priest of The Most High God?

The answer is in the definition of the second term in the word “Melchisedec.” What is the meaning of “Tsedeq?” This word is used for a man who is regarded as receiving deliverance from condemnation (Christ's trial), and being entitled to a certain Inheritance since He wasn't guilty of breaking God's will, He could receive His Father's Inheritance. This man is accounted as righteous. Since He is found righteous, and not guilty, then He alone has a right to The Inheritance given by God. There it is, as clear as a bell.

Melchisedec is a royal king and priest (sacrifice for sin) who, because He is righteous, has a legal right by God to receive The Inheritance of The Tree of Life in paradise with all of its wealth and riches. Melchisedec is the theme and story of The Bible. The first chapter of Hebrews spells it out.

Christ was the target (goal) of The Order of Melchisedec. Christ was chosen above all his fellow humans. This is because that in addition to the fact of being human, He loved righteousness – and therefore inherits all things (riches) from God, His Father. To do so, Christ became The Author of Everyone's Salvation. This is because He was found blameless, and loved righteousness.

CONCLUSION

To summarize: God has all promises and is “all and in all” from the beginning. All that was, is, and could be, can only come from the one YHVH, The Existing One – or The Most High God.

For God to be “all and in all,” which is God’s Purpose (I Corinthians 15:28), God, from Himself, being without descent, begot His Son, Jesus, from God, Himself, as His Son to be Melchisedec, The High Priest of The Most High God – who is above all other gods.

This Melchisedec was destined to come from The Seed of Adam and Eve to restore what had been lost, which is Paradise. The children of Adam and Eve never had access to The Garden and The Tree of Life. Melchisedec made that promise come to pass through Jesus, The Christ, or The Anointed One who became The King-priest of The Most High God. What a perfect and glorious truth from God’s Word. God, through His Son, as Melchisedec, will be “all and in all.”

As God’s High Priest, Shem passed on the blessing to Abraham. He blessed him with being The Promised Heir to receive God’s Inheritance of restoring paradise to humanity. Shem outlives Abraham by twenty-five years. Shem is no longer mentioned. This was done by means of Abraham’s faith, which was his righteousness. Abraham, therefore, tithed to Melchisedec – and is waiting for The Inheritance.

CHAPTER 10

CAN CHRISTIANS LOSE THEIR SALVATION?

The Apostle Paul said: “For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive” (I Corinthians 15:22). This famous Apostle explained that all the children born from Adam and Eve will die – and yet all will be made alive (Saved) in Christ. How can this be? Paul left no doubt about the identity of the “all” who will be Saved. The answer is that Everyone, in Christ, will be Saved. Can you believe that claim? What are the implications of all humanity being made alive at some future point in time?

UNFORGIVEN SIN

To some, those bold introductory statements may seem beyond belief. Yet this is exactly what Paul stated in his first letter to The Corinthians. This phenomenon indicated in I Corinthians 15:22 has been called by some: “Universal Reconciliation.” It holds to the notion that God is ultimately able to Save every human being. This concept is so important in its overall implications, that you must carefully evaluate the possibilities. In

this investigative process, you will see that Christ taught that everyone will be Saved, regardless of what you might have previously heard or thought about this provocative subject.

To begin this study, it is important to notice most of all, the following words that were uttered by Jesus. It is a topic that eventually leads to the subject of forgiveness on an eternal basis. Here is what you read:

Matthew 12:31-32 “³¹Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. ³²And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.”

Notice that Jesus Himself states there can be no forgiveness when a person sins against God’s Holy Spirit. Once an individual has received God’s Holy Spirit, find out how they should live, and then refuse to follow God’s Holy Spirit – they will not be forgiven in this Life – or in The Life to come.

Thus it seems that not everyone will be Saved. Furthermore, this instruction does not exclude some Christians who have failed this test. There is an additional warning that is added to those frightening words just quoted:

Hebrews 10:26-27 “²⁶For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, ²⁷But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.”

What does it mean? How can anyone like this ever be Saved? Going one step further in setting the conditions for this, Paul states the following:

I Corinthians 6:9-10 “⁹Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, ¹⁰Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.”

This is very serious, considering the consequence appears to be on an eternal basis. What will these people do? Will they be lost forever? Or is there some means whereby they may become ultimately Saved? Before considering the implications of that suggestion, you need to probe the words of Christ further:

Luke 12:46 “The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.”

Another stern warning about the serious consequences of going against the Will of God. As a result, there are those who will not be forgiven for their sins now – or In The World to Come. Those who don't repent will not be forgiven.

Jesus explained how those Christians who are not constantly watching for The Return of Christ, will also be considered as Unbelievers. Clearly, there are those who will not be forgiven their sins. Christians, who will be classed as unbelievers in The Time of Judgment, will be burned up along with the wicked. Therefore, by all appearances, Christians Can Lose Their Salvation. IF THIS IS SO, HOW CAN EVERYONE BE SAVED?

To answer this question, you need to know that God, The Father, gave Christ two basic responsibilities. First, and foremost, Jesus is The Savior and Redeemer. Secondly, Christ's responsibility is to be the Judge of all mankind, although not very much has been written about this second responsibility. These are two different roles, which Jesus Christ must fulfill.

THE UNFORGIVEN

God's Holy Days only serve as a shadow, or a picture, of what will come in the future (Colossians 2:16-17). The Holy Day called The Last Great Day of The Feast, Jesus stood up and cried out, saying: **“If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink”** (John 7:37).

This text has been associated with the “Waters of Life” (See: Isaiah 12:3

and Isaiah 55:1). Notice further what Jesus said: “**...out of his belly** [Greek: innermost being] **shall flow rivers of living water**” (John 7:38).

What is this Water of Life? Jesus revealed that in The Last Great Day of The Feast, God's Holy Spirit will be made available at that time, TO EVERYONE (John 7:38-39). This is The Living Waters. When does this occur?

The Bible shows how The Holy Days reveal God's Plans for the Future. The last Holy Day foreshadows God's earthly Purpose at the end time when every aspect will be brought into fulfillment. This corresponds to the time when Jesus foretold that The Holy Spirit will be made available to everyone (Revelation 22:1-2).

This is the basic reason why it can be stated that: “**...at the name of Jesus every knee should bow...And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father**” (Philippians 2:10-11). It does not say they unwillingly bowed their knees, but rather the text shows a willing admission of Lordship over them. There is no knee, nor will, that is too strong for God to bring into willing submission to His Will.

JUBILEE YEAR

The Jubilee Year is the one Holy Day, which lasts a full year. The Jubilee comes every fifty years. The basis for it is the fulfillment of The Seven Land Sabbaths. Israel was to count seven times or seven sets of years

(forty-nine years), and then The Fiftieth Year becomes The Year of Jubilee (Leviticus 25:8-9). This was a unique period, and it was designated to be the time of release from servitude, and release from debt. In like manner, Christ redeems The Church (everyone) before The Jubilee, which is symbolized by The Wedding Feast.

In Leviticus 25:10, it is stated that everyone must return to his own family land, or his own Inheritance. If the person or the family land has been sold, then the land must be returned to the original owners. This was the land that God had given to The Israelites as an Inheritance. So The Jubilee was The Year of Liberty; when all debts (sins) were forgiven (Leviticus 25:11-16). This is amazing typology – especially when compared to the ministry of Jesus.

This Holy Year had a strong theme of Redemption. Consider this example. This concerned Naomi's land. Her husband had died, and Boaz was buying it back into the family in order to continue Naomi's husband's Inheritance. This was before a Jubilee Year began, when all debts would have been released.

Boaz was "The Redeemer" of the land – just as Christ will Redeem you before The Jubilee (The Wedding Feast of Christ, The Groom). Jesus is The Husband of The Bride (The Church), and Christ Redeems everyone before The Jubilee, now known, herein, as The Wedding Feast. When Jesus returns to conduct The Wedding Feast, He says that many are called to This Feast – but few are chosen (can attend) (Matthew 22:14). Who is left out? To answer that question, read Romans 2:25-29.

Romans 2:25-29 “²⁵For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision. ²⁶Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? ²⁷And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law? ²⁸For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: ²⁹But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.”

Paul said that only those who are Circumcised in the Heart are considered to be True Jews, or The Bride of Christ (Romans 2:25-29). These are The Ones who will attend The Wedding Feast. Paul explained that a circumcised Jew (one born of a Jew) doesn't automatically make that person a Christian. It is something much more. You must have a change of heart so you can inherit The Abrahamic Promise (made to Israel). This is because: “...**circumcision is that of the heart...**” (Romans 2:29). So Spiritual Jews must have experienced a change of heart (Romans 2:26-29).

If a person isn't converted by having a change of heart, they will not be forgiven their debts or sins. They will still be a Gentile in the Spiritual sense, and will not become part of The Promise made to Abraham (Galatians 3:29).

Leviticus 25:44-46 “⁴⁴Both thy bondmen, and thy bondmaids, which thou shalt have, shall be of the heathen that are round about you; of them shall ye buy bondmen and bondmaids. ⁴⁵Moreover of the children of the strangers that do sojourn among you, of them shall ye buy, and of their families that are with you, which they begat in your land: and they shall be your possession. ⁴⁶And ye shall take them as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them for a possession; they shall be your bondmen for ever: but over your brethren the children of Israel, ye shall not rule one over another with rigour.”

The only people, or land, which is not released or forgiven from their debts, will be the heathen, or the heathen’s land. Those who are unconverted and have not become Christians are, therefore, still uncircumcised in heart, and will remain Gentiles (or heathens) – and they may even be in slavery (Leviticus 25:44-46).

Now for the dichotomy. It will only be those people, at the end time, who are converted Christians, who will qualify under grace for The Wedding Feast (The Jubilee). Those who reject God’s Holy Spirit will not be forgiven when Christ becomes The Judge. Even then, Jesus will offer The Healing Waters of God’s Holy Spirit to those who are not yet forgiven. This corresponds to The Last Great Day, which is depicted in The Holy Day (Holy Year) called The Jubilee. Now comes The Judgment (Revelation 20:12-15).

TWO RESURRECTIONS

Jesus proclaimed that there will be Two Resurrections (John 5:25-29). Each of these resurrections is quite different from the other. One concerns the righteous, and the other is reserved for all the rest of those who have ever lived on this earth. One other difference between The Two Resurrections is a span of time that elapses over The Thousand-Year Period.

Jesus Christ foretold a future time. He said there will be an hour when the dead will hear His Voice, and literally come back to Life (John 5:25). Jesus said not to marvel at this First Resurrection, for the hour is coming when all in their graves will hear His Voice and be Resurrected (John 5:28-29). These two verses need to be carefully discerned. This can be done by carefully comparing these texts with other texts. The bottom line is that This Resurrection will be the Final or Second Resurrection of everyone. It will contain two types of people. (John 5:29) When the remainder of the dead are resurrected, some will be resurrected to Life – literally Saved. The others will be resurrected to damnation (an English term).

The English word, “damnation,” is a poor translation. The Greek means “a time of crisis” (“crises”) or “judgment.” In this Second Resurrection, some will be given Eternal Life, while others will be “sentenced” or “judged.” The judged group will come before Christ, and He will be their Judge (John 5:30).

This means that The Time of Redemption, which is to be “bought back,” is now over. These people will not be Saved by The Sacrifice of Christ as The Slain Lamb or The Savior. Those who are Unsaved, and not covered by The Blood of Christ, will be sentenced for their sins. These are the ones who rejected God’s Holy Spirit – so they are not forgiven (Matthew 12:31-32).

THE LAST FARTHING

This is The Judgment, or time of crisis, for those who are not Saved. Listen to Christ’s own explanation of this critical time.

Matthew 25:31-34 “³¹When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: ³²And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: ³³And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. ³⁴Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:...”

All this information was presented by Jesus to The Apostles in The Olivet Prophecy. Adding to the above texts, you read that The King said,

“Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:...” (Matthews 25:41).

This is The Time of Judgment! Now Christ is The Judge, and not The Savior. He has already performed His Job as Your Savior. Now, His Job will be accomplished as a Judge.

THE SENTENCE

Those not Saved (goats), are thrown into The Lake of Fire. No forgiveness is granted, as their sentence must be carried out. How long do they stay in The Lake of Fire? Consider the following:

Matthew 5:20-26 ²⁰For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. ²¹Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: ²²But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. ²³Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that

thy brother hath ought against thee; ²⁴Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. ²⁵Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. ²⁶Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.”

Jesus said that each individual should agree with his adversary quickly while they are still able. You should settle out of court and admit you are guilty and repent. If not, the adversary (sins or debts) will deliver you to The Judge, and then The Judge will deliver you to the officer, and finally, you will be cast into prison (Matthew 5:20-26).

Then Jesus said: **“²⁶Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.”** No Repentance is required or even allowed at that time. You are Not Forgiven in This World or The World to Come (Matthew 12:31-32). You are going to burn in The Fire until all your sins or debts are paid in full.

Jesus plainly gives an example of a person going into debt, which signifies one's sins. This is exactly what The Jubilee Holy Year is all about. Until all vestiges of basic human carnality are changed, no debts or sins will be forgiven in this world or in The World to Come. Notice the more complete perspective in the following New Testament text:

Matthew 18:21-30 “²¹Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? ²²Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. ²³Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. ²⁴And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. ²⁵But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ²⁷Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. ²⁸But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. ²⁹And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ³⁰And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.”

Jesus said that if you, yourself, are not forgiving all the individuals who owe you a debt (not forgiving others as your Father forgives you), then

you will go into prison – till you pay your debt. There will be no release from jail. There will be no forgiveness, or redemption. Christ, The Judge, has sentenced you to pay back all debts for all your sins. How can you possibly pay back your full debt? What and where is this prison?

THE DEBT PAID

The seriousness of this matter cannot be underestimated. How will these debts be paid? Paul begins to lay out the answer.

I Corinthians 15:54-57 “⁵⁴So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. ⁵⁵O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. ⁵⁷But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.”

Paul said this corruption must put on incorruption, and only then will death be swallowed up in Victory (I Corinthians 15:54-57). Your human flesh must go. Now, what is it that causes death? Paul said that sin causes death. Sin is defined by The Law. Therefore, how do you get rid of The Law, and have no sin?

Romans 7:1-7 “¹Know ye not, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? ²For the

woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. ³So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. ⁴Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. ⁵For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. ⁶But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter. ⁷What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.”

Paul said that The Law has dominion over you as long as you are living in your human flesh (Romans 7:1). In essence, The Law has already killed Christians, and so they are dead to The Law (Romans 7:4). This is a different form of death from physical death. Therefore, Christians must put their human bodies to death, and as a consequence, have no sin

through Christ. Jesus has Redeemed (Saved) you from this body of death. You are “The Saved,” and have no more penalty to pay.

PENALTY OF THE UNFORGIVEN

The “unforgiven” must still pay the penalty. What is that penalty? The unforgiven must stay in prison until all their human flesh is gone. In other words, it was the flesh, and the sins of the flesh, that was the problem in the first place. So this problem must be eliminated one way, or the other. This is typified by the last farthing or debt that must be paid.

When Jesus spoke about His Return, He said that those Christians who knew exactly what God wanted them to do, and didn't do it, would be beaten with many stripes (Luke 12:47-49). They had a large debt to pay, therefore, had a big penalty. Those who didn't know or didn't understand, would be beaten with fewer stripes. This is a smaller penalty – but still a penalty.

The duration of time in prison is determined by how much of God's Truth you understood. The more you understood about God's Purpose, the more you would be held responsible. The less you knew (perhaps, never knew at all), you would receive very little punishment. But God chastens every Son he loves (Hebrews 12:6).

Where is this prison that all debts have to be paid? The Lake of Fire (Gehenna) is the prison. Jesus said that He came to send fire on the earth (Luke 12:49). Christ is The Judge, so you will burn until your human nature and your body is destroyed by fire.

After that, it is Only God who gives you Life. God gives The Spirit “in man,” which is God's Life Giving Energy. At death, this Life Energy goes back to God who originally gave it (I Corinthians 2:12, Job 27:3).

Paul told The Corinthians to deliver the fornicator in The Church over to Satan (I Corinthians 5:5). Why? This was so the fornicator's Spirit could be Saved in The Day of Our Lord Jesus.

I Corinthians 15:53-54 “⁵³For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. ⁵⁴So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, **Death is swallowed up in victory.**”

God is concerned that The Spirit “in man” (I Corinthians 2:11), which He had given to everyone at birth, is to be preserved with a Right Heart. Your human flesh must go, along with all its lusts. This is accomplished by becoming a Christian. Either that, or Jesus Christ, The Judge, will condemn you to hell (Gehenna) – to be certain that all the flesh is destroyed. The flesh is the basic underlying cause of sin.

Once the flesh is burned up, The Spirit given by God will be Saved and given a new incorruptible body. Remember, this Spirit is not you. It is God's Life Giving Energy. You are completely dead and gone (I Corinthians 15:53). Then, “**Death is swallowed up in victory**” (I

Corinthians 15:54). There is no more death. This means that only Life remains.

Christians, as well as all unbelievers, can lose their Salvation and be burned up in hell (Gehenna) (Luke 12:46). But everyone will be ultimately Saved by The Fire, which is the great penalty for sinning.

Revelation 20:14-15 “¹⁴And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.”

WHEN DEATH IS DESTROYED

Death is eventually destroyed in The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:14-15). The second death is literally the end of death. After that, no one is dead. All are alive. The Christians will be Saved by Jesus Christ, The Redeemer and The Savior.

Those “unforgiven” will be Saved by “Fire.” All will be Saved, and God will become “...all, and in all” (I Corinthians 15:28). Death will be swallowed up in victory (I Corinthians 15:54-55).

Matthew 5:19 “Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.”

In The Kingdom of God, Jesus said that those who didn't believe in having God's Ten Commandments written in their hearts will be called the least in The Kingdom (Matthew 5:19), but notice, they will still be in God's Kingdom.

Revelations 22:14-15 “¹⁴**Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.**
¹⁵**For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolators, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.”**

At the time of The New Kingdom, with The New Heaven and The New Earth, only those who have kept God's Ten Commandments “in their heart” (Romans 13:10), will be able to enter The New Jerusalem and partake of The Tree of Life.

Those excluded (until they learn to have Agapè or love for others) will be placed outside of the city (Revelation 22:14-15). So, Christians can lose their Salvation by rejecting or quenching God's Holy Spirit.

Even if you must burn by paying the last farthing for your sins and your rebellious nature, in the end, you and everyone else regardless of the total sum of their sins, will be Saved. Everyone is ultimately Saved.

CHAPTER 11

REAL REPENTANCE

What does Real Repentance have to do with Salvation? Real Repentance is one of the most Spiritually significant subjects you must fully investigate. What does it mean to repent? And what does baptism have to do with it? At times, you may think you should be re-baptized. Why do many Christians go through this experience? Let The Bible explain what is True Repentance.

SUBJECT OF REPENTANCE

When dealing with the subject of Repentance, there is no better place to begin than with the statements made by John, The Baptist just prior to when he baptized Jesus in the Jordan River.

Matthew 3:7-12 ⁷But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? ⁸Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: ⁹And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father:

for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. ¹⁰And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹¹I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: ¹²Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

John, The Baptist discusses the importance of Repentance with very significant Scriptural lessons. Notice the power of his introductory statement: **“But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?”** (verse 7). John did not mince words. This wrath is something that most have never understood.

FRUITS OF REPENTANCE

What wrath is John talking about? It was the impending doom for that society. This would be the eventual destruction brought about by Rome in 66-70 AD. That is why John said: **“⁸Bring forth therefore fruits meet [acceptable] for repentance:...”** He revealed that trouble was coming.

Now the question is this: “What was wrong with The Pharisees and Sadducees that John would not baptize them?” Many bypass this question, figuring the problem with these top religious figures was that they were all steeped in their traditions, along with being self-righteous about it. But that is only an assumption. It is not the answer to the question.

The real situation was that John found himself in a position where he was attempting to bring The Pharisees and Sadducees to a deeper understanding of the significance of their actions. This had to be done before they were baptized. So, John challenged them with the words:

“⁹And think not to say within yourselves [notice what The Pharisees and Sadducees say], We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.”

John tells these prominent religious figures they were of an unrepentant mind. They knew they were the children of Abraham, so consequently, they felt they already had The Promises guaranteed to them.

They reasoned, that since they already had The Promises why would they need to repent (change their ways)? In their own estimation, they didn't see the need to repent so they didn't change their ways. That was the problem. Furthermore, when you see no reason to repent, you don't see (the need for) Christ, The Messiah. So, they had blinded themselves from The Truth.

FOCUS ON THE MESSIAH

The entire Old Testament focuses upon The Messiah. The Purpose of The Old Testament was to provide the history of the prophecies about The Messiah. That was the whole reason for The Old Testament. A more full explanation about The Law (“nomas,” in Greek) is given in Hebrews 10:1.

It is The Torah, or The First Five Books of The Old Testament, which tells The Story about The Messiah. The religious leaders had studied The Scriptures, and yet they could not understand the underlying theme behind the story being told. In other words, they couldn't see Christ or God.

First, they needed to understand there was an important reason for them to repent. They had to show fruit or evidence that was “Meet for Repentance.” Notice how The Scripture says: **“¹⁰And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.”** If your Life is not operating on the basis that God wants, then you will be burned up.

DIFFERENT BAPTISMS

What is the difference between John's baptism and Christ's baptism? John said: **“¹¹I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance:...”** (Matthew 3:11). Consider that the word “Repentance” means nothing more than “a change of mind.” The Greek word for “Repentance” is “metanoia” (Strong's #3341).

What is a “metastasis” in medical terms? It means “a change of state.” It means “something changing;” so “metanoia” is “the metastasis” of something. It refers to something that is changing. “Metanoia” in the lexicon means “to repent,” “a change” or “alteration of mind.”

So something happens to your mind when you Repent. It concerns something which wasn't there before. Now, to investigate the root, “metaneo,” means “to repent, with regret, accompanied by a true change of heart.” The word “repent” means “a change of your mind, about how you think.” From this point on, you see things only from God's Mind. This is God's perspective.

A WORLD VIEW

If you were to study cosmology (the universe), you would find that scientists perceive the world as a “paradigm.” A paradigm means “the way” that you, as an individual, “see the world.” It is how you believe something. It is your point of view.

If you view it from the standpoint of a deity, then, you believe there is a God. From there, you can believe God. Then, it can be said that everything about the universe, is what you learned from God. That is a clear distinction.

If you are an atheist, what you study tends to support how you perceive things. This leads to what you believe. Therefore, you come to the conclusion that there is no God. Then you have those individuals in the

middle who are “the agnostics.” They are not sure which way they should think. They doubt. Hence, they are confused, whether they are sincere in this, or not.

So being repentant is nothing more than when your mind changes regarding how you perceive things. One person chooses to believe in God. That is a paradigm. It is their viewpoint. From another perspective, when an individual murders another person, the murderer's family, although condemning the murder, may try to save the family member who committed the crime.

If you come from the family of the murdered victim, you think in reference to the killer. You feel the murderer should get the electric chair. If you are the father or mother of the one who did the killing, all you can think about is how you can help save your child. Both have a different point of view. They look at the issue from their own humanity-based viewpoint. So what would they think when they read The Bible?

Usually, these people will study The Bible from the standpoint of their own preconceived ideas – much of which they had from the past. A truly repentant person believes he is a sinner, and by being a sinner has cut himself off from God.

WHAT IS CARNALITY?

What creates human nature? Moreover, what is carnality? The word “carnal” translates the Greek word “sarx,” meaning “flesh.” It means that

your reactions are like an animal. An animal does not think, but only responds to emotional stimuli and instinct. In like manner, a carnal person thinks in terms of self-survival. In this mode, you would be continually thinking of protecting the self, at all costs. Consequently, this kind of mind-set was purposely made corruptible by God. It is that kind of thinking that causes human nature.

As a human being with this characteristic deeply ingrained, it is not until you experience a change of mind, and see things differently – that you can view these external stimuli from a standpoint of the corruptibility of your own human mind. This takes a truthful admission from within – from the human heart. One must come to recognize a basic level of internal human deceitfulness, just as you read: **“The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?”** (Jeremiah 17:9).

Now, do you understand why John didn't baptize The Sadducees and Pharisees? They literally saw no need for God, so they saw no need to change their minds. As far as they were concerned, they had already received The Promise through Abraham. They were Abraham's children, and in their minds, it was “case closed.” As a result, their minds remained closed.

This is why John had to tell these Scribes and Pharisees that God could raise up children to Abraham from pebbles or stones. The Law that they had received in The Old Covenant literally blinded them. They thought that the keeping of The Law pleased God. When Moses came down from the mountain, he wore the veil. This obscured his face. In the same vein,

these religious leaders could not see God (in what was taking place).

John said: **“I indeed baptize.”** The word “baptize” merely means to “purify,” or “cleanse.” But this idea related to “necros” – or “dead.” In other words, the implication is that one is to be “cleansed by death.”

When baptized, you are allowing your own body to be put to death. John said: **“I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance:...”** John's baptism brings you to the place of being willing to change your mind in how you perceive things. This is because you know that you are sinful. In short, you must see things from God's point of view, and not from your human nature's point of view. In this case, the two words “human nature” literally mean the needs and deeds of the human body.

Going further in this line of thought, you must consider reproduction, food, life, preservation, and pain. God has produced all these elements in you, because you are temporary. After baptism, you are drawn to seek totally different viewpoints. Christ said,

“²¹...from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, ²²Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: ²³All these evil things come from within, and defile the man” (Mark 7:21-23).

Jesus knew that as long as you were seeing things from a human

perspective, you would, in most cases, come to the wrong conclusions. This is because of the human trait of placing self-preservation first.

SEPARATING REPENTANCE AND BAPTISM

John separates the two subjects of Repentance and baptism. John proclaims: “**...but he [Christ] that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you...**” (Matthew 3:11). The question is: “Should you put your human flesh to death because you are a sinner?” However, He is still going to baptize you – but with what? It will be: “**...with the Holy Ghost and...**”

Through John, you could never receive God’s Holy Spirit. Notice, that if you didn’t accept the baptism of The Holy Spirit through the coming Messiah – then what would you get baptized with? John’s answer to that question was: “¹¹**...and with fire:...**”

In other words, either your heart will change from the baptism of The Holy Spirit, or else your heart will change from The Purification by Fire. Then John states: “¹²**...Whose fan is in his [Christ’s] hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor [The Earth, and specifically Judaea]...**” (verse 12).

Consequently you read that John follows up on this with: “¹²**...and [He shall] gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.**” This is The Lake of Fire.

First of all, this pronouncement refers to the eventual destruction of Judaea in 70 A.D. Then, at the very end of God's Plan on earth, will come the time when God comes down to burn the earth, as declared in II Peter 3:7, 10, 12.

THE ETHIOPIAN EUNUCH

True repentance converts your mind and heart. You will view things, not as a human being, but more as God would see it. The only way this can be done is by means of The Baptism of The Holy Spirit. Consider the vital story about The Ethiopian Eunuch.

Acts 8:26-39 ²⁶And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert. ²⁷And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship, ²⁸Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet. ²⁹Then the spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot. ³⁰And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou reatest? ³¹And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would

come up and sit with him. ³²The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth: ³³In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth. ³⁴And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man? ³⁵Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus. ³⁶And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? ³⁷And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. ³⁸And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. ³⁹And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

How much training did The Eunuch have before he was baptized? He only had a chariot ride, a brief study period, and then he was baptized. Repentance results from a continual State of Growth. A person must always have a mind of Repentance, in order to grow Spiritually. When

you grow Spiritually, your mind will perceive everything from a deeper, richer viewpoint.

ANGEL OF THE LORD

Your viewpoint (paradigm) constantly changes to be in line with what God thinks. If you don't feed your mind, it will die. Now, back to the beginning of the story about the eunuch: **“²⁶And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip....²⁷And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure [perhaps a Chief Financial Officer] and had come to Jerusalem for to worship.”**

Up to this point, The Eunuch knew the place to worship was at The Temple in Jerusalem. He had the knowledge about Israel – which was generally what the Jews knew. He: **“²⁸Was returning, and sitting in his chariot [and] read Esaias the prophet. ²⁹Then the spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.”**

Philip surely had to run fast. How fast was that chariot going? The Eunuch was reading, so he may have not been going too fast or it would have been too bumpy. **“³⁰And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?”**

This could be compared to a Bible study workshop – when The Eunuch asked Philip to answer the question. **“³¹And he said, How can I, except**

some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him.”

This story goes hand-in-hand with Romans 10, where it tells how wonderful it is to bring good tidings of “The Good Things to Come” (see: verses 13-15). God uses preaching to help individuals understand The Truth.

Now, look at what Philip told The Eunuch: **“³²The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth: ³³In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.”**

This message had a dramatic effect on The Eunuch: **“³⁴And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee [What is Esaias saying?] of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?”**

With these words, The Eunuch revealed how open-minded he was. It was virtually an invitation for Philip to expound The Truth to him. This opened the door for Philip’s full exposition to The Eunuch: **“³⁵Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him [what?] Jesus. ³⁶And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; who doth hinder me to be baptized? ³⁷And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart,...”** The words “With all your heart,” meant for The Eunuch to really Repent!

ORGAN OF UNDERSTANDING

This story is going to become more significant when you proceed further into The Scriptures. Realize that the mind is an “organ of understanding.” It is the part of your brain that has understanding. But the heart goes beyond understanding. The heart gets down to the desire – or the motivation of the very feelings of the person – which makes the person decide what things they do, and how they do them.

When you love someone, you are always more willing to forgive them when they do wrong. If you don't love somebody, you are more willing to condemn them – or see them as “lesser.” In other words, the one who tends to condemn others, is angry because someone did them wrong.

When one loves somebody, even though that person sinned against someone, they will be more inclined to forgive. The action may have been the same, but it was with a different state of mind. It is motivated by what? It is the heart. Do you see the difference? Now it is time to understand Repentance.

Look at what The Eunuch did: **“³⁸And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. ³⁹And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip [Did something tell him to leave, or was it teleportation?], that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.”** What happened to The

Ethiopian? He went back to Ethiopia and probably returned to his original business.

In this same context, realize that it was your reading The Bible, or another preaching from The Bible, that brought you to the awareness of The Gospel – about the need for Jesus Christ, and the forgiveness of sin. Once the baptism of The Holy Spirit is received, you have need that no man teach you. This is because: “...ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth,...” (I John 2:27).

You now have a part of God in you. In this new mind, you will be viewing everything from God’s standpoint. Repentance has to do with the mind that is not viewing everything from one’s human flesh. If you have The Spirit of Christ in you, then you will accept The Word of God when it is read to you – or when you study The Scriptures.

If you are not growing Spiritually, but think you are secure in your status before God, then you are like The Pharisees and Sadducees. You will not be growing. You may be busy trying to prove that The Bible agrees with what you already believe in your heart.

On the other hand, a Christian doesn’t care about being right, because he is more interested in wanting to know God’s Will. Jesus said: “**I seek not mine own will, [rather I seek] but [what?] the will of the Father...**” (John 5:30).

THE STORY ABOUT APOLLOS

A man by the name of Apollos was a mighty preacher of The Truth. In The Book of Acts, you run across a description of his teaching ability.

Acts 18:24-28 ²⁴And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus. ²⁵This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John. ²⁶And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly. ²⁷And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace: ²⁸For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

Apollos was mighty in The Scriptures and was already a preacher – even before he had God's Spirit. He would go to The Synagogues to contend with opposing viewpoints, and to convince the leaders of each Synagogue. Without knowing Jesus, God was already using Apollos as a powerful

preacher. You saw the introduction to Apollos in Acts: **“²⁴And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria [Egypt] an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures.”**

Apollos had studied diligently and understood much about what The Scriptures meant. This man is someone that each and every person should be emulating, by studying to the same degree. You should be mighty in The Scriptures, because it is God’s Word.

Now you know that Apollos: **“...came to Ephesus. ²⁵This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing [what?] only the baptism of John.”** He didn’t know about Jesus and The Holy Spirit. He was only baptized in The Baptism of John, which was to repent, and putting to death all the negative pulls of the human flesh.

That is all Apollos knew. But because he was mighty in The Scriptures, he was already preaching. He had The Gift of “communication skills.” You read: **“²⁶...And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.”** This shows that he knew The Repentance of John.

Here is a critical observation. When you are Repentant, you are “teachable.” Resistance to being taught disappears. You still remain fervent in The Scriptures since you are still teachable.

JOHN'S BAPTISM

The text states: ²⁷And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia [Southern Greece], the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace: ²⁸For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ." In other words, the entire Old Testament is telling you in one form or another, about Jesus Christ, The Messiah.

Acts 19:1-6 ¹And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, ²He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. ³And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. ⁴Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. ⁵When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. ⁶And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

Consider this perspective: **“¹And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, ²He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed?”** This means that you can believe, and yet, not have received God’s Holy Spirit.

The following is the reaction of these people: **“And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.”** They didn’t know The Baptism of Christ by The Holy Spirit.

Then Paul asked: **“³And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John’s baptism. ⁴Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.”** That is as much as they knew.

“⁵When they heard this, they were baptized.” This means they were baptized again, only this time: **“...in the name of [by the authority of] the Lord Jesus. ⁶And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.”**

These were Gentiles, so it was revealed that they received The Holy Spirit by these signs. The mind can be changed only to a certain extent without God’s Holy Spirit. It can’t go any further on its own.

If you were baptized with The Baptism of John, which meant you saw yourself as a sinner, then you would put your flesh to death under the

water. These people didn't know about God's Power, or Spirit, until they were baptized in Jesus, and received The Gift of The Holy Spirit.

WHO HELPS YOU?

When these people received God's Holy Spirit, they no longer needed any man to help them grow Spiritually (I John 2:27). It meant that if you were sent to The Isle of Patmos, all by yourself with God's Spirit, you would still be able to grow Spiritually under those conditions of privation.

In other words, Repentance is the process that begins a continual change – that is constantly understanding God, and Christ from a Biblical point of view. You never stop growing and changing. You are always in a state of change – by putting your flesh to death. This is a significant difference.

Romans 2:4-5 ⁴Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? ⁵But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;...

You need God's Holy Spirit to make a change in the mind. You need your mind to be renovated – or reformed. Repentance means that your whole way of thinking is changed. You stop seeking what you think is right. Jesus said that if you try to "Save" your "Life," you are going to lose it. If

you lose your Life, you are going to Save it. That is the difference.

The Books of Romans and Hebrews are filled with Spiritual “Riches.” You read: **“⁴Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?”**

God wants you to change. It is a part of His Nature to have you change. Then consider the alternative: **“⁵But after thy hardness and impenitent heart.”** This is when one speaks to a group of people, and some get offended. They are offended because they don’t want to hear those words. They certainly don’t want to change their ways.

Words can’t do anything to you. But, according to your mind, it doesn’t want to accept a new or different point of view even if it is The Truth. In other words, their very inner position, their desire, their will, and their intent is to feel right in their own eyes. Solomon said: **“There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death”** (Proverbs 14:12).

To be right in your own eyes is to think you know The Truth and are already acting upon it. These are people who are satisfied with the knowledge they already have. It sounds just like Job’s problem. Job was righteous until he realized that only God could do everything. Job was going to hold onto his own “righteousness.” In like manner, Moses told The Pharisees and Sadducees that they would receive their righteousness

from The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25). But this was not God's righteousness.

THE LETTER AND THE SPIRIT

Are you beginning to see the problem between The Letter and The Spirit? If you reside in The Letter, then it is your own self-righteousness. You are making the decision about what is "Right" and wrong. The Law is telling you what is Right, and what is wrong.

When a righteous man came to Christ and said: "**...Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?**" (Matthew 19:16). The first thing Christ said to him was: "¹⁷**...Why callest thou me good?** Jesus went on to say that: "**...there is none good but one, that is, God:...**" The only One who can be described as Good, or Righteous, is God. Anything you consider to be Right, or anything you think is the way it should be is your own righteousness. It is just as Job had proclaimed about himself.

Your mind will not tell you The Truth if your heart is corrupt or you are not repentant. It would be impossible for you to have a logical mind. You have already read: "⁵**But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;**" Because you are unrepentant, God will see to it that you are disciplined, so that eventually you will be Saved.

When you feel someone is Good, perhaps you should say that this person is a decent person. There are decent people, but there are, also, indecent people. There is not a single human being who is Good. There are none. The culprit is not the mind, but the culprit is “the heart,” and the heart is the seat and center of what motivates your desire as to how you want things to be.

In time, a person who is growing Spiritually stops judging, and instead, feels that he must check and recheck the facts. He needs to find out what The Truth is. So don't decide ahead of time because your heart says that you are “Right,” no matter what. When someone calls you “ungodly” or a “heretic,” they don't want to hear something in opposition to what they already believe.

The Bible is so plain and so simple. It tells you about The Added Law, which was The Law of Moses with The Statutes and Judgments added (Malachi 4:4). That Law was only in force until Christ came. That is what your Bible says. You could say this a thousand times to a person who doesn't want to believe the words of The Bible, and they will not hear, or understand, those Biblical words.

The Law was added only until Christ came (Galatians 3:19). If you are honest, teachable, and you want to know what God's Words are, then it should be enough. You don't need any other proof, and yet, many will fight you, tooth and nail. There is a time when you must “shut up” because you are casting your pearls before swine.

Ephesians 4:22-23 ²²**That ye put off concerning the former conversation [conduct] the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;** ²³**And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;...**

This is what you are supposed to do, “²²**That ye put off concerning the former conversation [conduct] the old man.**” This is the old man that you have buried. Going on, you read: “**...which is corrupt...** ²³**And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;...**” So the mind is not only the idea, or an ability to reason, but there must be a godly Spiritual attitude which allows your mind to be open to receive new understanding.

This process will make you totally different. It will set you apart. You won't get offended easily. You won't become upset quickly because your understanding becomes more Godly. You won't be blowing up as often over small incidents. You will only be angry at sin, and not getting into disagreements.

Most people seldom get angry over sin. The person with whom you tend to get angry didn't shoot anyone, steal a million dollars, or take away a neighbor's house. All that happened was that something was said which you didn't like. That is not Repentance.

Going on: “²²**...the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;...**” What are the lusts? One of them is wanting to be “Right.” Yet you are told: “²³**And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;**” Repentance is a constant renewal of your attitude in your mind.

Romans 8:7 ⁷Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. ⁸So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

Romans 8:7 states emphatically that you can't please God. Examine this additional section of text:

John 4:23-24 ²³But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. ²⁴God is a Spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

Jesus told the Samaritan woman at the well: “²³**But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers** [false worshippers exist also] **shall worship the Father in spirit** [you can't do it in The Letter] **and in truth:...**”

So you must worship The Father, first Spiritually, and then secondly, in Truth: “...**for the Father seeketh such to worship him.** ²⁴**God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must** [not could, not should, but must] **worship him in spirit and in truth.**”

This should be worship of God in Spirit, and not by any human effort. How do people get around it? First, the text says that God only seeks people to worship him in Spirit. There is only One Way that God wants

you to worship Him. You must worship Him in Spirit and in Truth. It is just that plain and simple.

WHAT MUST CHANGE?

Romans 10:8-10 ⁸But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; ⁹That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. ¹⁰For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Look at these words: **“⁸But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy [what?] heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach;”** Until your Repentance, your actual change of mind progresses to the point that it replaces your previous desires and motivations.

How strongly have you set your “will” in resisting God’s Words? Unless your heart is changed, your mind is going to be corrupt, and you will not have experienced True Repentance.

Daniel 12:9-10 ⁹And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. ¹⁰Many shall be purified, and made white, and

tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.

At The End of Time, just before The Four Kingdoms are completed, The New Heavens will exist with God's Reign on Earth. You read that: **"⁹And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. ¹⁰Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand"** (Daniel 12:9-10).

What must the wise individuals know about the end time? Is this a prophetic event? Is The Temple being rebuilt in Jerusalem? No, this has nothing to do with prophecy. What everyone in the religious world believes is usually in error. Repentance from error is the key to understanding.

ABOUT THE END TIME

Matthews 25:1-5 ¹Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. ²And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. ³They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: ⁴But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. ⁵While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

Read this same section of text with bracket comments: **“¹Then shall the kingdom of heaven [this is The End Time] be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom [Christ]. ²And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. ³They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: [the unwise had no oil] ⁴But the wise took oil in their vessels [a residual supply] with their lamps [those with oil and those without oil]. ⁵While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.”**

Notice, both the unwise and the wise virgins are all asleep and don't know when The Bridegroom is returning. Daniel talks about those who are wise, which symbolizes the five virgins who are wise. With regard to the end time events, Daniel 12 does not apply to “the wise” who understand. In fact, they are wise because they do not know when He is coming back but act in a proper manner.

This is a little shocking, isn't it? It gets to be so simple. Instead, so many people are thinking with their emotions and do not understand what God is telling them.

Luke 21:5-7 ⁵And as some spake of the temple how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, ⁶As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. ⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and

what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?

This Scripture has been in The Bible for nearly 2000 years. Many today are sound asleep. This is one reason the author is purposely avoiding The Whole Prophecy “explanation” at this time – but will in detail later.

Going on: **“⁵And as some spake of the temple [what temple, and what are they talking about?] how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, ⁶As for these things [Herod’s temple] which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.”**

Which temple is this? There is no temple in the future. So this prophecy relates to Herod’s temple. Continuing with the text: **“⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? [Herod’s temple thrown down] and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?”** The reference here concerns Herod’s temple.

Matthew 24:1-3 ¹And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. ²And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. ³And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what

shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

Notice these words: **“¹And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: [Herod's temple] and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. ”** This is a critical phrase, because it demands that each Bible student make a careful determination about which Temple is being discussed. Now you must ask three vital questions.

THREE VITAL QUESTIONS

1. **When was Herod's temple destroyed?**
2. **What is The Sign of Christ's coming?**
3. **What was destroyed in 70 A.D.?**

Consider the following textual commentary as a prelude to understanding. It provides the underlying basis for further study about the end time.

Luke 21:24-28 ²⁴And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. ²⁵And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; ²⁶Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those

things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. ²⁷And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. ²⁸And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

Earmark this as it is a critical “sign.” Everything prior to verse 24 has already happened. ²⁴**And they shall fall by the edge of the sword”** Who is this? It concerns all in Judea in 70 A.D. Let them who are in this city flee to the hills. It is talking about Jerusalem. Jesus is talking about The Herodian Temple.

Therefore, the reader should recognize that these things have already happened. ²⁴**And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: [The Jews will experience this] and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles [The Jews will disperse].”** Ever since this time, this land has been in a state of turmoil and war. How long does this continue? It will be: **“until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.”**

That is the only event that Christ can tell you about before His Return. Everything prior to this has already happened. And what is The Time of The Trial of The Gentiles? Paul tells you that it is the time when God finishes calling all The Gentiles to The Truth. When is that?

To determine the answer, you must ask: “What did Christ say?” No one

knows the times or season, but only God, The Father. Jesus didn't know the full effects of His prophecy – or when He would be returning. Therefore, how can He tell you about His Return when He didn't know at that time?

Christ will return when God, The Father is finished fulfilling The Times of The Gentiles (whenever that is). The text says: “²⁷...**And then** [see the signs and wonders after the time of the fulfillment of The Gentiles] **shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.** ²⁸**And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.**” What things are these? It concerns those events that accompany His coming in The Clouds. That is the only time. It is the only identifying anchor point that you can look for.

SIGNS TO ANTICIPATE

Look at all the various interpretations about Daniel that have been proposed. Many of them have been “concocted” for the most part. This state of confusion has turned The Word of God into a “mish-mash” that is completely false. Do you now understand why the ten virgins didn't know the times? You still do not know. No one knows.

When will you be granted this knowledge? It will be when Lightning comes out of The East and The Trumpet sounds and The Heavens are Shaken. Then you will see Who is coming.

Matthew 25:6 ⁶And at midnight there was a cry made,
Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.

The timing of this maximum event is “...**at midnight** [when do they wake up from sleeping?] **there was a cry made** [the shout and the last trumpet], **Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.**”

Now the only difference between these two sets of five virgins each – is what? Consider that when He comes, no one is ready. No one is prepared because no one knows when He is coming. They cannot discern which season, or which day this occurs – at midnight. Five did not have a sufficient supply of oil. The wise ones carried with them a residual supply of oil. They had an extra amount of God’s Holy Spirit. Christ said The Christians were supposed to be The Light of The World. Therefore, the candle is not hid under a bushel but on a hill.

So what makes wise Christians understand the end time, as opposed to the unwise Christians? Their Light is shining! They are growing Spiritually! This means you must Watch and Pray always so that you are ready (Luke 21:36). This is the formula for discerning the signs that inform you.

You cannot, ever stop being Repentant. You cannot stop experiencing a change of mind. If you are among the wise, then you will always be growing. Then, everyone can see Christ in you, as The Light of The World. Who is The Light of The World? Christ is. That is how they will understand. It is a Big difference.

Hebrews 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the

doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,...

Repentance is a continual process. It is a continuous change of mind. It is not by Spiritually growing in The Letter. No, it is not in The Letter, but in The Spirit. Notice what you must repent from. **“Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again [what?] the foundation of repentance [what kind of Repentance?] from dead works [human works are dead works].”**

You cannot please God in the flesh (Romans 8:7). You must change your mind about anything you think is The Right Way to please God. Only God can reveal what is Right and Good for you to follow. It is His Righteousness.

John 21:15-19 ¹⁵So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. ¹⁶He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. ¹⁷He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all

things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. ¹⁸Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. ¹⁹This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

The Apostle Peter did not understand this when he first repented. What you understand today, he had to learn. Christ finally told how he would learn it. Jesus Christ was Resurrected, and He was getting together with His Disciples. **“¹⁵So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter...”** Jesus was getting to the heart of the matter, by getting down to the real depth of what Real Repentance was. The account continues with: **“¹⁵So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest [agapè] Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I [what?] love [philia] thee”.** Peter couldn't say the word “agapè.” He could only say “philia,” which only expresses human love. He couldn't convey God's deep Love – “agapé.”

DEGREES OF LOVE

What did Christ say to do, if you Agapè Him? He said: **“Feed my lambs**

[love your brother as yourself]. ¹⁶**He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest [agapè again] thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love [philia] thee.**” This is only human love. Then afterward, Jesus spoke: **“He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.”**

Finally, Jesus understood that Peter didn't get it – or if he did, he did not admit it. This is because he had boasted earlier that he would never leave Jesus – even if everyone else ran away. Finally, Jesus spoke the third time. ¹⁷**He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest [philia] thou me?”**

Jesus went down a notch this time from “agapé” love, to “philia” love. **“Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me?”** That is exactly what Peter said. **“And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love [philia] thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.”**

Now, for an important point when Jesus prophesied to Peter: ¹⁸**Verily, verily, I say unto thee: When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldst: [deciding by your own human decisions] but when thou shalt be old [Peter's time of death], thou shalt stretch forth thy hands [perhaps he was crucified upside down], and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldst not.”**

When does Peter finally get Real Repentance? When he was willing to give his very Life. What has to go? Your Life has to go just as Peter had

to give his Life. You are either going to let it go willingly, or it is going to be burned out of you.

Mark 12:29-31 ²⁹And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord: ³⁰And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. ³¹And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

When one of the scribes asked him what was The Greatest Commandment “²⁹ ...Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord: ³⁰And thou shalt [what?] “love [Agapè] the Lord...” What did Christ ask Peter? Do you Agapè me? “And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all [all what?] thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.”

TRUE REPENTANCE

Complete and True Repentance is a state of mind that is True and correct and will come upon you when you have an “agapè” love for God. Are you so busy doing religious Works to please God that you never have time to love him? If so, you have never grown Spiritually to the place that your connection with God is a one-on-one relationship. He loved you first, and

now, you love him. If you were going to marry a woman and you were coming down to the wedding party to meet your bride, what kind of virgin would you marry? Christ doesn't marry a bride who does not love him. To me, that is bizarre. It has a sense of humor about it. The wise virgins love Jesus because they have been Spiritually growing in God's Goodness. It is because of Christ's Love for you, and what He IS, that The Bride has made herself ready. The Bride now loves Christ with an "agapé" love – just as He loves her in the same way.

Remember, He told the five unwise virgins that **“He never knew them.”** They were too busy being religious – not growing Spiritually and not in love with their God. That comes with complete Repentance. You may have started out wanting a sugar daddy. You must strip away the baloney. You want somebody who's rich? You want someone who's prosperous? You want somebody who can take care of you – keep you safe? That is called Repentance, Stage One.

Christ is not marrying any one who wants to marry him for money. That may sound funny. But in reality, isn't that where it starts? When you first repented, you were worried that, as a sinner, you were going to die. You wanted to be Saved or Live Forever. But, you can't have it that way.

You are only going to make it if you come to love God as He loves you, and you love your neighbor as you love yourself. THAT'S CALLED REPENTANCE - REAL REPENTANCE.

CHAPTER 12

WHY CHRISTIANITY CAN'T BE A RELIGION

Are you shocked reading the title of this chapter? This is a subject that few people have encountered. Yet, there it is in bold capital letters: WHY CHRISTIANITY CAN'T BE A RELIGION. How can this be? It certainly is a radical claim. Surely, most everyone to whom you speak would think that Christianity is indeed a religion. But, here you are now witnessing a reverse claim. It is the exact opposite of what people would naturally think. How could Christianity NOT be a religion? It seems absurd. Are you prepared for the surprising answer to this paradox?

ELEMENTS OF THE WORLD

Something stood in the way of New Testament believers who wanted to receive The Gift of Sonship from The Almighty God. It was something quite serious that was getting in the way of progress. Consequently, The Apostle Paul took decisive action, so that these newly Called-Out Ones (Ecclesia or The Church) could become Sons of God. The Apostle Paul

knew that he had to reveal The Truth about something that was getting in the way, and preventing a successful outcome.

Paul shows that Christ came to deliver mankind from certain elements that were holding back some of the early disciples from realizing the goal of Sonship. This restraining influence was designated by Paul as: “...**the elements of the world:...**” (Galatians 4:3). What are the elements of the world?

An overall perspective about these elements can be obtained by reading the full context of Galatians 4:3-7. Paul showed the importance of discerning the difference between: “...**in bondage under the elements of the world...**” (verse 3), when it is contrasted with the primal objective for The Saints which was to receive: “...**the adoption of sons...**” (verse 5). This is the vital Sonship in question. In other words, by this process, they would become “...**an heir of God through Christ**” (verse 7).

So these “Elements of The World” are getting in the way. You may ask, “What are these elements?” Many Bible students and teachers just pass right over these important Scriptures regarding “The Elements of The World.” Some teachers merely dismiss this short phrase as being only a “worldly” matter of some sort but not having much significance. Yet this topic was very important to The Apostle Paul.

Whatever these “Elements of The World” may be, according to Paul, they are something sinister. They are something that can hinder a disciple of Christ's to such an extent that he or she might even miss out on the

promised Sonship under discussion in these texts.

That is why every disciple of the teachings of Jesus needs to divide The Word of God more cautiously just as Paul told Timothy: “**....rightly dividing the word of truth**” (II Timothy 2:15). This is what the Bereans did, in order to see “**...whether those things were so**” (Acts 17:11).

ELEMENTS DEFINED

Strong's Concordance, #4747, “stoicheion” for “elements” means, “something orderly in arrangement.” It signifies “a rudiment” or “a human orderly system.” In this case, Paul is discussing these “elements” or “orderly arrangement” as they are based upon “...Law...” (Galatians 3:23, 4:5). Then, this Law becomes the fundamental basis for religious effort. It is religion based on Law.

Of course, this outlook appears logical in one sense. In other words, this created system deals with human nature in a logical fashion. But there is one thing it cannot do. It cannot change human nature. So, whether you might like to admit it or not, this practice led to the formation of a religious system that was based upon human effort (works). You can study any human work-oriented, disciplinary system of religion, and perceive a simple step-by-step sequence of logic in it from the human standpoint. This is “Works.”

But it leaves out one vital thing – Christ. He is The Only One who is able to change human nature. It may begin with teaching, but it also employs supernatural help. This comes through The Holy Spirit.

The Greek language introduces a general perspective about this form of “Works.” But it does something else. It shows the relationship to Christ who delivered you from all efforts that are part of any “human religious systems.” Now, this system served a purpose for a period of time. But it was not to last forever. Something superior would replace it.

Consequently, Paul described the system this way: “...**the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith**” (Galatians 3:24). So the “Schoolmaster” or “The System,” brings you back to the main introductory subject, which is: “...The Elements of The World...”. There were certain elements that were in the world – and of the world – that made up a certain kind of “schoolmaster.” Some wanted to continue with this schoolmaster. They couldn’t seem to function on the new system based on freedom in Christ.

Why does this situation exist? It is because not enough people have come to see that these physical “elements” are “worldly” – and that they require human effort to keep them going. However, you cannot become a Son of God by means of any kind of “Works.” You can only become a Son of God, through Christ, by God having begotten you by His Holy Spirit. Keeping a human religious system that is based on human effort does not, and cannot do this.

MANY CALLED

Jesus Himself stated: **“For many are called, but few are chosen”** (Matthew 22:14). He could not have stated the situation any plainer. It means what it says. Many are called but few are chosen.

In the Greek language, the word for “church” is “ecclesia.” It is the same as saying: “The Called-Out Ones.” The Church is composed of all those who will be part of Christ’s Wedding. The Wedding has The Groom (Christ), The Bride (Church), and The Guests. The Bride and The Guests are all humans who are written in The Lamb’s Book of Life (Revelation 21:27). Those not found written in The Book of Life will be thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:15). The point is that only a few are chosen – not the many. Not everyone gets to come or are invited to the wedding.

Since The Church or Ecclesia, refers to The Called-Out Ones, as a group, they will not all be going to The Marriage Feast of The Lamb. Only a few are The Chosen for this. So, if you become part of The Church, it does not automatically mean that you will be the ones who are The Chosen for The Wedding. Why not? You can even get an invitation, but if you are not dressed properly, you are not allowed to attend.

HOW RELIGION DEVELOPED

The genesis of all religious systems began with Cain and Able. From Cain, paganism developed into a multitude of heathen systems of religion.

Why were they called pagan? It is because God had nothing to do with them (Romans 1:21-25). Paul said that God allowed these people to do these things, because after they had known God, they started to worship “the creation” rather than The Creator. The Bible states:

“...when they knew God; they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened”
(Romans 1:21).

This was the beginning of paganism. It was the basis for the concept of religion that developed into thousands of different sects – which were based on human reason without The True God. In other words: **“...God gave them over to a reprobate mind...”** (Romans 1:28). From this original descent from The Truth, people of the world built their own religious systems. Naturally, the citizens of these societies were required to practice these religions in order to belong.

Now, on the other hand, Cain's brother, Abel, was different. He started to build a human religious system that was predicated upon what he thought would be acceptable to God.

Genesis 4:1-7 ¹And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the Lord. ²And she again bare his brother Abel. And Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. ³And in process of time it came to pass,

that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the Lord. ⁴And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the Lord had respect unto Abel and to his offering: ⁵But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell. ⁶And the Lord said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? ⁷If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? And if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him.

The main point of this story is that God accepted Abel's offering, which was a firstling from his flock. But God did not accept Cain's offering of fruit, from his garden. Why not?

The Bible does not give a record of God's reasons for doing this, but it may have been because Abel's animal sacrifice pointed to Christ (hinting, also, of the death of the animals that provided clothes for Adam and Eve in The Garden) whereas the fruit of the ground did not. The main point is that Cain started a human religious system. But God was pleased only with Abel's approach, and attitude.

Around 3,000 years later, David declared that God never required sacrifices or offerings. This would mean that Abel's sacrifice was not a requirement of God (Psalm 40:6-7) although it is stated the sacrifice pleased God.

FIRST HUMAN RELIGIOUS EFFORT

Cain was the first in human history to be involved with starting a human-effort-religious-system. Cain was thwarted. He became angry, killed his brother, and then went to The Land of Nod to create his own pagan religion. After the flood, Nimrod, Cain's descendant (The Tower of Babel), continued this pagan system (Genesis 11).

However, under Abel, men called on The Name of God. After Abel died, Seth was born as his replacement. When Enos, the son of Seth was born: **"...then began men to call upon the name of the Lord"** (Genesis 4:26). This was the beginning of The Church, or The Called-Out Ones of God (Romans 10:13).

Under Seth, his descendants sought to please God by calling upon His Name. Under Cain, who created a totally pagan system, his descendants did not call upon God. Cain's human-based religion has continued down to this very day.

King David announced that, in reality, God never intended for any human system of religion to get started – except the one which Christ would come and institute. Christ would put God's Law in your hearts (Psalms 40:7-8). This is the main objective – not external conformity through "law-keeping."

In other words, God does not want His future Sons to follow a human religious system requiring human effort on his or her part. What God

wants are Sons who have His Laws written in their hearts – or literally – His Laws become part of their very nature (Romans 2:14-15).

CHURCH IN THE WILDERNESS

From the time of Abel, to Seth and then to his son, Enos, men called upon The Name of God. They were The Called-Out Ones, or The Church, as they were seeking – and were accepted by – God. God's Church (The Called-Out Ones), continued after the flood, up through the time of Noah's son, Shem.

Finally, you have the arrival of Abraham from the line of Shem. He became the father of The Abrahamic Covenant, because Abraham believed and trusted in God – to the extent that he was willing to offer up his son, Isaac. This became a major basis for the prophesied Promise of Grace through The Messiah. Abraham was a type of God who offered His own Son.

Now, consider the contrast more carefully. Pagan religions are without the true knowledge of God. Also, they do not call upon God, but rather continue to develop their own human religious systems. This process continued until the arrival of Christ.

Through Isaac, his son Jacob was renamed Israel. This man, Israel, was the father of twelve sons, who later grew into The Nation of Israel. God brought them out of captivity in Egypt – and then the entire host became known as: “...**the church in the wilderness...**” (Acts 7:38). In other

words, Israel was God's Church in The Wilderness, by being The Called-Out Ones of God. When they sinned a great sin, it was like a great rebellion. God had to give them The Ten Commandments at Mount Sinai. They showed that they didn't want to obey – even though they had promised to do so (Deuteronomy 5).

Instead, Israel constructed a golden calf, and then worshipped it – breaking The First Commandment. God wanted to kill them, but Moses intervened, and God spared them. He gave them The Law (Torah), which would eventually bring them to Christ. This is like “the schoolmaster” that was discussed earlier. After they sinned against The Commandments, God added The Statutes and Judgments (Deuteronomy 5 and Malachi 4:4). Now they could come to The Temple and be judged.

Israel (God's Church) did not understand how The Works of The Law were intended to bring them to Christ. Neither did they understand how it showed they needed to Repent. Instead, they believed that by keeping the legalism of The Law, they would somehow become righteous – and therefore, be acceptable to God, as His Church. When God's people sinned, God instituted the Do's and Don'ts of The Law, The Statutes and Judgments or Works. Much like a schoolmaster making them write a 100 times, they will not do whatever they did which was wrong. (sinned)

Eventually, God hoped they would be sorry for sinning and repent – but they never did. But, all God really wanted was for Israel to keep God's Ten Commandments IN THEIR HEARTS (Deuteronomy 5:29).

When Jesus came to this earth, the Israelites rejected Him as being their Messiah. This was because they misunderstood The Purpose of The Law. They thought the keeping of The Letter of The Law was an end in itself – to please God – rather than to bring them closer to an attitude of Repentance for their misdeeds. If done properly, this would have brought them to Real Repentance (Romans 5:20).

God wanted Repentant People who had experienced a change of mind and heart. God wanted His Law to be in their hearts – and not by human effort or Works (Romans 2:28-29). To be acceptable to God, one must have a complete change of heart.

Any religious system, whether (1) pagan, or (2) that of following The Letter of The Law, is not enough. No one is acceptable to God until one's heart is Right with God. Any human effort performed by Works that you do in order to please God, cannot, does not, and never will please God.

When Christ came, and Israel rejected Him (by not repenting), God allowed His Son Jesus, to become A Sacrifice for The World (I John 4:14). This was done by allowing The Gospel (or Promise) that was made to Abraham to accomplish the task of opening “The Door of Salvation” to The Gentiles. This was The Gentiles' first chance to become Christians.

WORLD SALVATION

Always remember the basic underlying Truth that Jesus came to Save The Whole World (I John 4:14). When Judah, the last tribe to remain in the

land, rejected their Messiah, the inhabitants of Judaea were scattered throughout the world. This was the beginning of "The Diaspora," or The Great Dispersion.

Jesus prophesied that The Temple would be destroyed (John 4), and from that point on, the people would worship God only by Spiritual means. It would never be through the Works of The Letter of The Law or any other pagan religious system. God's Truth is a way to learn a Perfect way of Life, not an organized religious system.

In 70 A.D., when Titus destroyed The Temple, The Old Covenant ended (Hebrews 8:13). Access to God ended with Judah's unrepentant state (rejecting Christ). Without The Temple, there was no longer "a court" to administer God's Law. Access to God through the administration of The Letter of The Law was completely finished. There was no longer a religious system to bring Judah to Christ.

God changed the "Called-Out Ones" from "The Letter" to "The Spirit." No Temple was needed. Now, only Repentance is required for a person to be in God's Church. It is the acceptable method of pleasing God.

THE NEW TESTAMENT CHURCH

In Ephesians 2:11-15, Paul explained how a basic change took place. At one time, The Gentiles were without God, but by means of Christ removing the veil to The Mercy Seat in The Temple, The Gentiles now had access directly to God. There was no need of a Temple, nor was The

Law necessary. Even the priesthood had changed from Levi to Melchizedec.

Now, The Law became a Spiritual matter (II Corinthians 3:6). This New Covenant required no effort, no Works, no religious system to please God (II Corinthians 3:17). From this point on, as Christians, no religious system (human effort) would ever be acceptable to God.

PURE RELIGION

In James 1:27, The Apostle taught that the only religion God would accept would be a pure and undefiled one. Nothing you may accomplish by your “Works” will make you acceptable to God. Christianity is not a religion – rather it is A Way of Life. It is the way that one should follow God’s Son, Jesus.

In John 14:6, Christ said that He is The Way, The Truth and The Life. Being a Christian is A Way of Living. It is not a religious system of humanity trying to please God by thinking they are somehow “righteous” by following (1) The Law, or (2) any other religious system of human Works.

The word “pure” in the Greek means “clean” or “undefiled.” Any human effort to become righteous would not be acceptable to God – because you are unclean in your nature and your flesh.

With your human nature, you cannot please God, no matter how hard you try. This is because any human being is too weak to ever keep all of The

Law perfectly. No matter how good you may try to be, it is not good enough. One must be truly righteous or perfect. For this reason, you cannot live a pure and undefiled religious Life. God declares that the only human Works He will accept are as follows:

1. Don't judge others,
2. Help those in need, such as widows and orphans, and
3. Don't follow what the world does.

These are the only Works or Deeds that humans can do which will please God. No other religious effort is required. One good summary from The Old Testament is: **"...what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?"** (Micah 6:8).

ISRAEL MISUNDERSTOOD

The Apostle Paul wrote instructions to The Believers at Rome so they could increase their understanding that Christianity was not a religion based on human "Works." Please read Romans 10:1-6 thoroughly. Paul said that although Israel had a zeal for God, they believed they could please God by keeping The Letter of The Law. By so doing, it was "Israel's righteousness" and not God's. Verse 4 clearly states that Christ is The End (or aim) of The Law. The Letter of The Law was a step towards bringing them to Repentance (Romans 5:20).

If Israel had repented, they would have received mercy, and would have been forgiven their sins. But, they refused, and Christ turned to The Gentiles – The Law was a Spiritual matter (John 4, II Corinthians 3:6).

By God writing His Law in your hearts and minds, you will grow in God's Righteousness – and it will not be by means of any human effort or religious system. I John 3:4, “...**sin is the transgression of the law...**,” defines what sin is. But, The Apostle John goes on to enlarge upon this definition.

CHRISTIAN SIN

John gives you the complete definition of sin very clearly. John said: “**All unrighteousness is sin**” (I John 5:17). Jesus explained the definition for sin, and the “Christian Life” that is a must for being Saved. It's all there in The Sermon On The Mount. Please read Matthew 5, 6 and 7 completely.

Christ said that if a man were to look upon a woman with lust, it is already adultery in his heart. If you covet your neighbor's goods in your mind, you are already a thief. Any unrighteousness for a Christian is a sin, even if only in your mind (or heart). God's Righteousness is a matter of The Heart – and not The Letter. The Letter is futile because it changes nothing and it certainly doesn't change anything in any person wanting to be a Christian.

Only by God's Holy Spirit in you, can a person experience the renewing

of your heart and mind. This is all that pleases God (Romans 12:2). No religion is acceptable to God, but only those who have Christ working in them by God's Holy Spirit. Only this will please your Father, God (Colossians 1:27).

CHAPTER 13

IS THE LAW DONE AWAY?

Some Christian groups believe The Law is done away. Other Christian groups believe The Law with all its legal requirements is still in force and Christians must obey them. Which group is Biblically correct? Has The Law, God gave to Moses, been done away?

THE SURPRISING TRUTH

Most Christians approach the question about The Law in one of two ways: (1) You keep The Law or (2) You do not keep The Law. Surprisingly, according to The Scriptures, both are wrong. Let's first address the question, is The Law done away?

THE LAW FULFILLED

In Matthew 5:17, Jesus said, **“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.”**

Much discussion hinges about the word, “fulfill.” Some say Christ meant you to keep the whole Law. Others say Jesus came to complete The Law or finish The Purpose God gave him. Which is correct?

You know Jesus did not destroy The Law or end The Law. The Bible plainly states, and it will be proved later, The Law is never done away. Your understanding of this verse revolves around the meaning of the word, “fulfill.”

The Greek word, “pleroo,” in the Greek defines it as, “to level up,” “fully fill” or “complete.” Some say by keeping it, The Law is fully filled. Others say, no, it means to come to a final end or completion. Which meaning is correct?

First, there is a specific Greek word that means “to keep” or “do.” In Acts 13:22, Paul was preaching in Antioch in The Synagogue and was talking about King David. Paul is preaching about how God changed the name of The King of Israel from Saul to David. Paul said, “**And when he had removed him (Saul), he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will.**” The Greek, in this case, for “fulfill” is “poieo,” and it specifically means, “to do” or “to make.”

If Jesus meant when He said, “to fulfill” The Law was “to do” or “keep it,” then he would have used the proper Greek word to keep or do which is “poieo.” Since Christ specifically said the Greek, “pleroo,” which is to complete or fill up, He was not saying He came to keep The Law but to complete its Purpose. Christ was saying The Law had a Purpose and not merely a point of law in a court of being guilty or not, when sinning or breaking The Law as a sin (I John 3:4). Is there further proof? Yes, the

context makes the meaning clear. Many Christians interested in the subject of The Law read the context of Matthew 5:16-17, but miss the entire meaning Jesus was teaching. In addition to The Law, Jesus also said in Matthew 5:17 that he came “to fulfill” what The Prophets had prophesied. Obviously, Christ did not mean “to fulfill” or “to keep” or “do” what The Prophets said. He came not only to fulfill or complete The Law but also to fulfill what The Prophets had said about Him. How plain. That is why Jesus said “pleroo” instead of “poieo.” So Christ said He came to complete what The Law said about Him just as The Prophets had prophesized about Jesus. How clear; how plain.

But, there is even more proof.

In Matthew 5:18, Christ said, **“For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.”** Once again the Greek word is “pleroo” and not “poieo.” Jesus is saying The Law is a shadow of things to come about Him and every single part of The Law refers to Christ (Hebrews 10:1).

Now, you have absolute Biblical proof that not “one jot,” or “one tittle” will pass from The Law (at least, until the new heaven and new earth). So, The Law in The Old Covenant and The New Covenant is not done away until God Himself comes to the earth and establishes The New Heaven and New Earth.

There is more proof that The Law is not done away.

THE OLD AND NEW COVENANT

The question of The Law is really resolved by understanding the difference between The Old Covenant and The New Covenant. Contrary to the belief of many, The Old Covenant, is not The Old Scriptures, as many refer to it. The Old Covenant and The Old Testament are one and the same. Both are only a part of The Old Scriptures, or The Old Testament. In fact, The Old Covenant is only a part of the Law or Torah. It was added to The Torah or Law. This added part became part of The Whole Law. This became the entire Old Covenant. A Testament is a Will which a death has put in force. Read all of Hebrews 9, where without shedding of blood, a Will cannot be enforced. Since The Law or Torah is only a shadow of things to come, only animal sacrifice was needed for the blood. This enforced The Old Covenant or the legal requirements of The Law. The Letter of The Law imposed the death penalty, when a capital crime was committed. So, The Old Covenant was not The Old Scriptures, but a Covenant imposed upon Israel for sinning. This was a Carnal Covenant because Israel was carnal (Hebrews 7:15).

When Moses called all Israel together in Deuteronomy restating of The Law, he said. “...**Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that ye may learn them, and keep, and do them**” (Deuteronomy 5:1). Interestingly, Moses at this point did not say, “Israel hear The Law or Torah, but only told them to do The Statutes and Judgments.” Why did Moses not include the entire Law? You will shortly see why The Law or Torah was not included. In fact, The Ten

Commandments were not included. Why? Because Israel broke The Ten Commandments, and God added The Statutes and Judgments (Deuteronomy 5:22,29). Malachi 4:4 clearly states The Statutes and Judgments became part of The Law of Moses.

Moses said this Covenant was made by God with Israel in Horeb or Mt. Sinai. However, Moses, at this point, is only referring to The Statutes and The Judgments. Moses said, **“The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day”** (Deuteronomy 5:3). This Covenant did not include The Abrahamic Covenant since Moses said this was a different Covenant or Agreement than the one made with the fathers of old. The Abrahamic Covenant was a written part of The Law or Torah but was different than this Old Covenant made with Israel, which specifically had to do with The Statutes and Judgments. The basic purpose of The Statutes and Judgments covered all the legal works of The Law or Torah. That is why this Covenant, The Old Covenant, was called The Law of Moses or given to Moses in writing or The Letter of The Law. Most of The Law or Torah is history. It covers the genealogy of the shadow or prophecy of The Promised Seed (Christ) in Genesis 3:15. The Added Laws to The Ten Commandments were The Statutes and Judgments. These Statutes and Judgments were The Laws added because Israel was carnal and kept sinning. That is the reason God had them build The Tabernacle or Court where their cases were tried and settled, out of court, by the offering of sacrifices and gifts. Since they were carnal, God intended they continually be reminded of their sinful

nature till Christ came. If they sinned by breaking The Ten Commandments, then capital punishment or death was the penalty.

THE OLD WINE

In Matthew 9:14-17, Jesus was asked why the disciples of John fasted so often but His disciples did not. He said there was no reason to fast while The Christ, The Bridegroom, was with them. He said after He would leave them, then, they could fast.

Then, Christ said you cannot put new wine in old bottles, because those new bottles would explode. The two cannot function together. Jesus was letting them know His disciples were under a New Covenant “teaching” which would not work with The Old Covenant teachings. How simple and clear The Scriptures really are. Whatever is the difference between the old pharisaical teaching of The Letter of The Law and The Spirit of The Law, and why they cannot function together? Christ was very definite about it.

THE LETTER OF THE LAW

Jesus came right out and said those under The Letter or written Law (Torah) must keep and do it all. James, also, said the same thing in James 2:10. Jesus said The Pharisees were extremely careful to keep The Law in The Letter, by being sure they tithed but transgressed the weightier matters of The Law like judgment, mercy and faith (Matthew 23:23). No one can keep the whole Law, and therefore, are guilty of breaking all of it. Jesus

said you better tithe to The Levites because they sit in Moses' seat or Administration of The Letter. How anyone can use these Scriptures to justify paying tithes to a ministry is beyond belief? Jesus plainly said they were in Moses seat and had to keep the whole Letter of The Law. The Law demands you tithe to The Levites, not the ministry.

Jesus had not died yet, so, The Old Covenant was in force, and that is why Christ said they had to keep all The Law. You can prove what The Old Covenant was.

OLD COVENANT

Paul answers this question about The Old Covenant. In Hebrews 9:15-22, Paul said under The First Testament or Covenant, blood had to be shed to put The Covenant or contract in force. Read completely to see what is The Old Covenant or Testament. Verse 19, Moses spoke all and every precept of The Letter of The Law (Torah). Then Moses took the blood of clean animals and sprinkled both The Book (Torah) and all the people. Moses said this places the contract in force between you and God (verse 20). What contract? The contract of requirements in The Letter of The Law between God and Israel. It is the written Letter of The Law, with the added Statutes and Judgments to condemn carnal Israel. These were Laws written between God and Israel because they were carnal and unconverted. The actual account in Exodus 23:7 states all the people of Israel agreed to keep everything in this Book of The Law “perfectly.” If not, they had to go to court in The Temple and plead their case. If it was a small

transgression, they settled out of court by doing sacrifices. If they were guilty of capital sins or crimes, they were put to death. This is The Old Covenant or Old Testament. It was called The Law of Moses or administered by Moses and The Elders. It is exactly what Christ said in Matthew 23:23. This is The Old Covenant as administered by Moses based on The Letter of The Law. This Covenant was not The Covenant or Promise with Abraham. This Law, with its legal works, whenever broken, dictated the penalty because they were under the curse when they broke any part of it.

THE NEW COVENANT

Jesus plainly said one cannot mix this “old wine” or “old system” of God with the “new wine” or “The New Covenant” and be accepted by God. The Old and New Covenants have two different purposes. They are in total contradiction to each other. The Letter of The Law reminds them of sin. The Law written in your heart and mind doesn't even think of sinning because of love or Agapé (I Corinthians 13).

Read all of Hebrews 10 in great detail. Verse 1, Paul said The Law or Torah along with the sacrifices were all merely shadows and not real, as far as what God was really doing or accomplishing. What God wanted was to get rid of sin (Hebrews 10:2-3). The Letter of The Law could not do that. By doing the sacrifices in The Letter of The Law of The Old Covenant only made them remember they were sinners, and as yet, not forgiven. Of course, the capital sins put Israelites to death.

Now, with The New Covenant, Paul said God prepared a body, Christ, to take away sins. The Old Covenant, based on The Letter of The Law, could only remind them of their sinning. It is exactly what Paul said was their schoolmaster to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). That is the only Purpose for The Old Covenant based on The Letter of The Law. They were carnal and God wanted them to repent (I Timothy 1:7-10). The Old Covenant and New Covenant have two totally different purposes. The Old Covenant caused death and The New Covenant produced Life. Once someone repents, The Old Covenant no longer applies because it has fulfilled The Purpose of The Law through Christ. One is no longer “under the curse.” The penalties in The Statutes and Judgments are meaningless to a Christian except as shadows of The New Covenant. That is exactly what Christ said He came to do, in respect of The Law, “to fulfill” or “complete” it. But, did Jesus do away with The Law? Astonishingly, He did not. The New Covenant does not do away with The Law or Torah.

In Hebrews 10:16-24, Paul very clearly states, The New Covenant, by God’s Holy Spirit through Christ in you (Colossians 1:27), writes God’s Law in your hearts and minds. Wow! The Law is not done away! It is written not in The Law of Moses, but in Christians’ very heart and mind and has made a change of your very nature. How?

Verse 24 plainly reveals by your provoking one another unto love and good works, The Law now becomes a Spiritual matter, a matter of how you think and not what is written in The Letter in The Law or Torah. This is exactly what Christ said! The Written Law can say, “**Thou shalt not**

kill,” but a Christian, with God's Love, would not even think of killing because God has changed their heart and mind with Christ in them.

When you study The Bible, why do you think in verses and not in CONTEXT? This is a great mistake in rightly dividing The Word. Matthew 5, 6, and 7 tell you the very same thing. In Matthew 5:17, Jesus told you He came to “fulfill” or “complete” The Law. Everything The Law came to do (bring you to Christ), when you repent, it allows Jesus to write The Law in your heart and mind by God's Holy Spirit. Christ in you (Colossians 1:27). That is why Paul said The Old Covenant had to vanish away so “the new” could take its place. In 70 A.D., The Temple ceased and only The New Covenant remains until The Millennium (Hebrews 8:13). At that time, the unrepentant world, along with Israel, will come to Christ. The Temple and The Law with the sacrifices will bring carnal people finally to Christ. The entire Law must be kept in The Letter (James 2:10 & Matthew 23:23). The Law is only for an unrepentant world (I Timothy 1:7-10).

Jesus states how you are to keep The Law in Spirit and not as is written in The Letter. A Christian's righteousness has to be better or more righteous than The Pharisees (Matthew 5:20). Why? Because, in Matthew 23:1 and 23, Christ said they sit in Moses' seat. They only administer The Law of Moses. Jesus said for a Christian to do The Letter, is not good enough. Now, The Law must be a part of your heart and mind, a part of your very nature. Christians must keep The Law on a much higher plain. Christ's example was Perfection. Christ uses the very letter of the written Ten

Commandments. In Matthew 5:21, He said The Letter of The Law demands, “Thou shall not kill.” How clear do you want it? As a Christian, if you do not kill but if you still would like to, you are still guilty! So, The Letter is meaningless to a Christian. Then, He said if a Christian is angry with his brother without a cause, you are in danger of The White Throne Judgment. You are, already guilty of murder, even if you are only angry with your brother without a cause. That is Christ’s definition of keeping The Commandments in your heart. The Christian definition of sin is much greater. In I John 5:17 it states, “**All unrighteousness is sin:...**” If a Christian even “thinks” to kill his brother without a cause, he is guilty. It does not matter what The Law in The Letter states. For Christians, The Letter is not good enough (Matthew 5:20). Read all of Matthew 5, 6 and 7 for more examples of keeping The Law in your heart and mind. The written Law which tells you not to kill just is not good enough for a Christian. It becomes meaningless because The Letter of The Law is only a shadow or type of really keeping God’s Law by a change of nature which no longer requires its legal works. The Legal Works, Statutes and Judgments were added for carnal people to be tried in a Court of Law or Temple. Only capital sins, breaking The Ten Commandments, put them to death. These Laws were added to The Torah or Law and were in force until Christ came (Deuteronomy 5 and Malachi 4:4). When Christ came, He fulfilled The Law by His righteousness in you (Colossians 1:27). That is the difference between The Letter and The Spirit of The Law.

WHAT CHRIST CHANGED

Since The Law is not done away just what did Christ change? Any person who can understand the English language in The Bible knows the subject under discussion is not tithing but Perfection (Hebrews 7:1-12). After Jesus stated how to keep The Law Spiritually and not in The Letter, He said, **“Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect”** (Matthew 5:48).

How does a Christian become perfect? You become perfect by God writing His Law in your heart and mind, by having Christ in you. That is the subject of Hebrews 7.

Hebrews 7:11 states perfection (not tithing), came by a different priesthood – Melchisedec. Jesus was a High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec. Read the entire chapter on Melchisedec.

Paul said The Law was changed under The Melchisedec Priesthood, which was a priesthood of righteousness (Hebrews 1:12). How was The Law changed? Some think it is about tithing. It refers to The whole Letter of The Law or Torah. The next two chapters (8 and 9) point out that the change is the entire Old Covenant based on The Letter of The Law and certainly not tithing.

This change of Priesthood changed The Administration of The Law from Moses to Christ, as Melchisedec. Hebrews 7 states by The Administration of Melchisedec a Christian is made perfect, but the written Law under

Moses only reminded you, that you were still a sinner. By Melchisedec and his sacrifice, your sins were forgiven and (even more important) completely forgotten. That is what Hebrews 9:9 and Hebrews 10:14 state. The Old Covenant, or The Letter of The Law is taken away or was removed, but the second, The New Spirit of The Law remains forever (Hebrews 10:9). How simple and plain for you to understand.

DEATH AND LIFE

Paul said Christians were not under the administration of death as with Moses or the curse of The Law (II Corinthians 3:6-18). Legal requirements do not apply for Christians. The Letter of The Law only applies to Christians as a shadow or type of what The New Covenant is. That is why The Apostles quoted from The Law revealing their true meaning under The New Covenant. Under Christ and The Administration of Life, you are under The Priesthood of Melchisedec, which is a Priesthood of Faith by keeping The Law Spiritually, and not in The Letter. The Law for Christians is not done away, but changed to Spiritually keeping of God's Law with a change of nature through Christ. That is why Paul said The New Covenant was a "better" Covenant with "better" Promises. The New Covenant makes you Perfect or Holy as God, The Father, is through Christ. To think Christians need The Written Letter or even The Ten Commandments to tell right from wrong is to deny Jesus came or what He came to do. Christ came to make you Holy and Perfect like His Father. In Christ, you have God's righteousness, and not by human effort of The Letter of The Law. You must study Hebrews 9

thoroughly. The following Chapter, "The Law is Spiritual," will further explain this vital point.

THE BIG DIFFERENCE

What is the real difference? The Letter of The Law and The Spirit of The Law cannot function together.

1. In Hebrews 8, it describes The Old Covenant which is based upon The Letter of The Law, which had to be kept in its entirety (Matthews 23:23), was to vanish away. This happened in 70 A.D. with the fall of The Temple. One cannot keep the entire Law without The Temple. Plain and simple. God ended the possibility of keeping The Letter of The Law. After all, God would not demand keeping something that could not possibly be done. The Letter of The Law ended in 70 A.D.
2. The Purpose of The Letter of The Law was only a shadow (Hebrews 10:1). The Letter of The Law, The Old Covenant, only was a type and not real "righteousness." It could only be a type of God's Righteousness. Hebrews 8 and 9 describe what Law Paul referred to in Hebrews 10:1. Since The Letter of The Law was only a shadow or type, Paul, therefore, said in Hebrews 8:13, it would vanish.

3. Paul in Hebrews 10:1-18 clarifies the big difference between The Old Covenant, The Law in The Letter and The New Covenant, The Law written in your heart and mind.

Hebrews 10:2 states, if The Old Covenant, keeping The Law in The Letter, made people perfect, then there would no longer be a reason to keep offering sacrifices when they broke The Letter of The Law. God wants you to become Perfect (Matthew 5:48). The penalty under The Letter of The Law required animal sacrifices as a reminder of their sins. That is all The Letter could do. It only told them what sin was (I John 3:4).

Now the big difference is when God writes His Laws in your hearts and minds.

Hebrews 10:2, also, states, when one is Perfect – once a sin is purged, that person should no longer have any conscience of sin. When God's Holy Spirit gives you God's love (agapé) in your hearts and minds, you wouldn't even think of sinning. You no longer have a conscience to sin. It is no longer necessary to have right and wrong written in A Law because Christians would not even think of sinning. Sinning, when Perfect, is in opposition to your nature. Why? You would not even think of killing another person because you love him. The mind and heart would not even think of it.

The word, "purge," in its Greek meaning is a "catharsis," a "complete purging" from your mind. The doctor might tell you to have a catharsis of

your colon. That is to flush out the colon. That is the meaning Paul said was in reference to your conscience or heart and mind when God writes His Law in your heart and mind. Clearly, you do not need a written Law because even your conscience would not think of killing your brother because of God's love.

There it is, God's Law is Spiritual, forever, but only when The Law is written in your hearts and minds. The Old Covenant, with The Written Law, no longer exists for Christians, only The New Covenant.

CHAPTER 14

THE LAW IS SPIRITUAL

Is The Law of God Eternal? Many declared that it is. Yet, there is not one Scripture in The Bible that states The Law or Torah is Eternal. But, in Romans 7:14, The Apostle Paul clearly said The Law is Spiritual. If The Law is not Eternal – then how could it be Spiritual?

If The Law is Spiritual, then it cannot be in the same mode as The Letter of The Law. A number of Scriptures indicate this would be a contradiction of terms. These two descriptions of “Law” operate in different realms.

Originally, The Letter of The Law was given for humans to keep. Carnal people need to be told right from wrong. However, if The Law, as God intended, was to be observed Spiritually, then how can human beings keep it when they are dominated by fleshly impulses? This is a paradox.

The central point is that humans cannot keep The Law because the flesh is, indeed, weak (Romans 7:22-25). Paul taught that since The Law is Spiritual, and humans are carnal or beast-like, then they are subject to sin and eventually death (Romans 7:14).

GOD WANTS SPIRITUAL GROWTH

After God gave Israel The Ten Commandments at Mt. Sinai, Israel sinned when they made the golden calf and then revered it. The Israelites felt they needed some kind of image to look upon, and to worship. God recognized that Israel would always be carnal and stiffnecked. Originally, God had wanted Israel to be able to keep His Ten Commandments in their hearts.

When God had completed giving these Ten Commandments, it is stated that: **"...and he added no more"** (Deuteronomy 5:22). So The Ten Commandments constituted the full and only Spiritual requirement that was issued by God (Malachi 4:4).

From the beginning of The Old Covenant, given to Moses, which was given to Israel, God wanted His Ten Commandments to be kept Spiritually. God was telling them from the very start of their nation how The Ten Commandments were to be kept Spiritually in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:28-29).

Paul said that The Law was a Spiritual matter and not a matter of keeping The Letter of The Law.

Jesus said that God only wants Christians to worship Him in Spirit and Truth. You read: **"God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth"** (John 4:24). This is exactly what Paul meant when he said: **"...the law is spiritual..."** (Romans 7:14).

LETTER OF THE LAW

If The Law of God is a Spiritual Law, then a logical question arises. Why did God instruct Moses to write The Law in The Letter? Furthermore, many ask, “What is The Letter of The Law?”

You must remember that The Law that was added, was a separate Law that had been added to The Ten Commandments. You read: **“...Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions,...”** (Galatians 3:19). What Law was that?

This was another Law that was added to the original Ten Commandment Law. This extra Law was included after Israel had sinned by worshipping the golden calf. It was a Law of sacrifices and various offerings. What was The Purpose of these actions? It included all that is right and wrong in God’s Eyes. They were designed by God to instill a sense of acknowledgment when an Israelite had sinned. It was an ongoing Witness. This Added Law also gave the penalties – one came under the curse. What Law was added? It was The Statues and Judgments (Malachi 4:4).

Furthermore, these actions were designed to probe for any potential underlying sense of conscience – the wrong or the sins these people did regularly on a daily basis. Notice what Jeremiah said in reference to this additional Law:

“...For I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices:...”
(Jeremiah 7:22).

So, The Ten Commandments were given before any other laws were later added. After The Israelites had sinned, by creating the golden calf, Moses went to God along with The Elders. In the process, with God's inspiration, Moses wrote The Entire Book of The Covenant, which is The Torah or Law.

Then, all the people were required to agree to obey everything that was written in this Covenant (Exodus 24:1-8). Note especially, that all these legal requirements were only added to The Ten Commandments after Israel had sinned.

Notice further, this Law was written rather than being uttered directly by God, as He did with The Ten Commandments. The Added Law is therefore, the written Torah, which are the first five books of The Bible. The Statutes and Judgments became part of The Whole Law.

These written books include Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy. These are the five books called The Torah and now had this Added Law. The Law now contained The Statutes and Judgments (Malachi 4:4). But notice, they were written – which means “in The Letter” – or “written in The Letter.”

MINISTRATION OF DEATH

Paul says that keeping The Letter of The Law kills. You read: “**...for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life**” (II Corinthians 3:6). So, you have a basic contrast being introduced here that compares: (1) The Letter killing people, along with (2) The Spirit giving Life to people.

Now the word “**ministration**” appears fully four times within just three verses in II Corinthians 3:7-9. You are told that it was: “**...the ministration of death...**” that was being removed (verse 7). This negative Law was also called: “**...the ministration of condemnation...**” (verse 9). So it was described by two phrases. This is the element of death described as: “**...that which was done away...**” (II Corinthians 3:11).

But, it was not everything. There was something that remained. Notice these words: “**...For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious...**” (verse 11). So something important remains. About: “**...that which is abolished...**” (verse 13).

The observance of The Letter of The Law can only place you into subjection to death in the administration of death. In Romans 7:4-6, The Apostle Paul informs The Christians that keeping The Letter of The Law kills. In verse 5, Paul said that because of the weakness of the flesh, you cannot keep God’s Law in The Letter.

MINISTRATION OF THE SPIRIT

The flip side of the situation just posed, is that it is only by keeping The Law Spiritually, that you can receive Eternal Life.

So, it is the Spiritual part of The Law that remains. The Spiritual part is described by Paul in two phrases (the ministration of death). So the element of death now gives way to: **“...the ministration of the spirit...”** (verse 8), and **“...the ministration of righteousness...”** (verse 9). One can now become perfect through Christ.

In Romans 7:6, the word “letter” is translated from the Greek word “gramma.” Strong’s Concordance #1121 defines “gramma” as “a letter,” “epistle,” or “book.” It merely means, what is written down or what was written in a book. In this case, it was The Law or Torah. The Letter of The Law was everything written down in The First Five Books or Torah. These books also included The Ten Commandments (Exodus 20, Deuteronomy 5).

Why did God include The Ten Commandments in The Torah? II Corinthians 3:7 states that The Ten Commandments were included in The Law because they were **“...engraven in stones...”** as a way to show they could not keep them Spiritually in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:29).

These Israelites were carnal, and had hearts of stone and not a fleshy heart. You read: **“...not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart”** (II Corinthians 3:3). Paul said this administration by Moses, of

The Letter of The Law could only produce death (II Corinthians 3:7).

The keeping of The Letter of The Law, The Torah, can only produce death (Romans 7:5). If, as a Christian, you believe that one has to obey The Law in The Letter, the end result can only produce their death – and never Eternal Life.

If one lives within The Law, one will have a better human Life, but will never receive Salvation by keeping The Letter. This also applies to the writing of The Law with all its legal requirements of Works and deeds. These legal works are contained in The Statutes and Judgments, which were added. Salvation only comes as a Gift from God who writes His Laws Spiritually upon your heart.

PURPOSE OF THE LETTER OF THE LAW

First, The Torah was added to The Ten Commandments only because Israel kept sinning. They were a carnal and stiff-necked people. The Torah was given to them in The Letter because The Letter of The Law was written only for an unrepentant and carnal people (I Timothy 1:7-10).

This Added Law was only given and was only to be kept by Israel to make them see how carnal they were (Romans 5:20). It was added to bring them to Christ so they could eventually Repent (Galatians 3:19-24). Since Israel was carnal, they of themselves could not know Right from wrong. God had to require Moses to write down what was Good and what was evil or wrong for the carnal Israelites. This is The Letter of The Law.

They had to be told what sin was (I John 4:3).

LETTER ONLY A SHADOW

When a person sees a reflection of his own shadow, he recognizes this particular shadow is not the actual individual. The real individual is not only somewhere else, but is, also, entirely composed of a totally different substance. The individual person is real, but the shadow is not real. This principle is basic for understanding the following text:

“For the law (“nomas” in the Greek, and “Torah” in the Hebrew) having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect” (Hebrews 10:1).

The entire Letter of The Law was not real. The complete Book of The Written Law was only a shadow, or type, of what was coming in the future and only through The Messiah. Today, the keeping of The Letter of The Law does nothing to please God and all the more so, since Christ already came. Paul said:

“¹²Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. ¹³For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die:...” (Romans 8:12-13).

This means that the best you can do by obeying The Law in The Letter is to have a good Life. But, all of the observance of The Law in The Letter

doesn't change a person's basic nature. Only by keeping The Law Spiritually can you receive Salvation. All the rest is not true reality. It is only a shadow.

In Colossians 1:27, Paul explained that the only real Truth in a Christian is "Christ in you." He warned you against the legalism, such as circumcision, required Sabbath restraints, imposed Holy Day observance, compulsory new moons, meat or drink, etc. (Colossians 2:16).

Notice, Paul explained how all these legalisms are only a shadow of things to come. None of these Letter of The Law efforts or works are ultimately real in the physical sense. All of them are only types, shadows or representations of what the real elements of the Spirit World would be like.

The Letter of The Law, with its Works and deeds of human effort, does nothing to give you Salvation. In fact, "The Letter of Human Effort," as it could be called, by being "good in the flesh" does not please God (Romans 8:8). No human labor of righteousness in this sense ever pleases God, whether it is by observing God's Holy Days, tithing, denying oneself, or keeping holidays such as Easter, Christmas, etc. Paul said that if you do these Works, or keep those days, it is for nothing (Philippians 3:6-9).

THE LAW IS SPIRITUAL

Why is there such a great conflict between The Letter of The Law and The

Added Torah? The Letter of The Law and The Spirit of The Law produce two different types of results – which is a contradiction. The flesh is weak, so in your human body, you readily commit sin. Biblically, it is irrefutable that keeping The Law in The Letter, in all its legal demands, can only produce death.

You must keep The Entire Law because if you break one little part, you are guilty of transgressing The Entire Law (James 2:10). Why is this? It is because God wants you to be perfect – just as His Son is Perfect. Death is the sole outcome when one attempts to keep The Letter of The Law.

If The Law is not kept Spiritually, you cannot become perfect as Christ had specified. Jesus said: “...**Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**” (Matthew 5:48). God demands Perfection. That can only happen with Christ in you, along with God's Holy Spirit. It is God's vehicle in making The Law a Spiritual matter. If The Law is written in your hearts and minds, you receive Salvation. It is the only way Eternal Life can be given as a Gift – and that is why you must become Perfect, without any blame.

THE SPIRITUAL PROCESS

This chapter, as well as the following chapter, spells out exactly how God writes His Law in your hearts and minds. Since the Goal is Perfection, once you are no longer guilty, you can receive Life with all its riches. Since keeping The Letter or Works of The Law produces death, then keeping The Spirit of The Law produces Life – ETERNAL LIFE. That is

why The Glory of The Old Covenant was intended to bring you to Repentance, so one could receive Christ. That was the intent and Purpose of The Old Covenant (Galatians 3:24).

The New Covenant had a greater Glory, which can give Life, when you repent and receive God's Holy Spirit. The Letter only results in death. But, in The Spirit, you receive Salvation. The Letter and The Spirit are diametrically opposed to each other, and therefore, you cannot keep The Letter of The Law and The Spirit of The Law. You cannot have it both ways (Hebrews 8:6-13).

Romans 7 and Romans 8 are the chapters that spell out the details about how The Law is being Spiritually written in your hearts and minds. Romans 7:1 declares that as long as you are in the flesh, The Law has dominion over your lives. Then Paul reveals the results when you die spiritually, and no longer live in this flesh. The Law no longer has any dominion when you die.

Read Romans 7:1-5. Verse 6 continues the theme, and states that when you are dead in Christ, you are no longer obligated to keep The Letter of The Law with all its legal demands.

From the time of your Repentance and acceptance of Christ in Faith, you now become responsible to serve The Law only in the newness of The Spirit – and no longer in The Letter with its Works and Deeds. This is The Bible plainly speaking to you!

Romans 7:7-20 explains The Purpose for The Letter of The Law. It was

given to show just how sinful you are in this flesh. In fact, by your own human efforts, you cannot keep from sinning. This, then, brings you to Repentance – or a complete change of mind.

In Romans 7:18, Paul said that nothing good dwells in his own flesh. This is why it is so difficult to stop being a sinner. When Paul repented, he found there were two laws in himself. After the inward man (Spiritually, in his mind), Paul delighted in God's Law. But, he was captivated by The Law "of sin" in his flesh (Romans 7:19-24). How was Paul (verse 25) going to be Saved? Thankfully, he could be Saved, but only through Jesus Christ in him. That means a Christian must have Jesus change your nature by writing The Law in your heart and mind.

BEING IN THE SPIRIT

At this point, you should understand that, as Christians, there is nothing you, with your own human abilities, can do to please God. Now, you are free. You are not obligated to keep The Letter of The Law with all its legal requirements.

Keeping The Law Spiritually goes beyond even God's written Torah or The Law. The Spirit of The Law goes beyond the legal Works of The Law. Keeping The Law Spiritually involves your heart and Christian motivation alone. The Spirit of The Law demands a loving heart – the kind that Jesus Christ had. The keeping of The Letter of The Law does nothing for Salvation. It won't make you Holy like God.

Besides God's Holy Days (which are no longer required for Christians), "all other days" that were manufactured from human reasoning are, also, excluded. In Colossians 2:8, Paul warned the people not to allow any "traditions of men" to "spoil you." This includes Christmas, Easter, Halloween, etc., and all other human ideas like asceticism. This is the attempt to be pious by running away from society and living a life of solitude. Paul explained that these are: "**...the commandments and doctrines of men...**" (Colossians 2:22). Paul admits that all these human attempts which are determined by humans to please God have, indeed, a show of wisdom "**...in will worship...**" (verse 23).

Depriving the human body, such as starving oneself or taking a vow of silence for God, does not please God at all. Why is this? It is because all of your human efforts of attempting to be religious can never make you perfect, holy, or righteous. These things can never make you like God and are not needed or wanted by God.

Only Christ in you can do that. Now, you are ready to search The Scriptures and prove how Christians should keep The Law Spiritually but only in your hearts and minds. Romans 7:25 declares that your hope for deliverance from your sinful nature is through Jesus Christ, only.

As a Christian, and having Christ in you, you cannot be condemned any longer of your sinful bodies. The Greek word for "condemned" is "katakrino" or "taken to trial." You no longer need to appear before The Judge in The Day of Judgment (Romans 8:1). Any time that you, as a Christian, commit sin, you have a special pass where you can immediately

pray to God, and, through Christ, repent. Then you are forgiven. Therefore, you have no condemnation when you errantly sin. This is a very simple formula, and a great GIFT from God, your Father.

Paul states, The Law of The Spirit makes you free from The Law of sin and death, which is The Letter of The Law (verse 2). Clearly, verses 3 and 4 declare that The Righteousness of God's Law of The Letter is fulfilled in you as you walk, not in the flesh, but after The Spirit. For a Christian, The Law must only be kept Spiritually to receive Salvation. The Law is always in force, but Spiritually.

Going on, Paul explains that when you are carnally minded, it can only produce death (verse 6). It is a matter of your mind and not your human deeds or effort. Keeping The Law Spiritually has to do with your mind and heart, not your body or any Works or good deeds you may perform.

Romans 8:8 plainly states, no one can please God by trying to be righteous through their own human effort. Since this is true, you no longer should worry about keeping The Letter of The Law, because you, now, have God's Holy Spirit in you. By this means, you know instinctively Right from wrong without the need for The Letter of The Law (Romans 8:9). Why? Because God's Love is in you by His Holy Spirit.

With Christ in you, the body is dead, and The Law has no dominion over you (Romans 7:1). You are Righteous (Romans 8:10) only when you have The Spirit of Life in your mind and heart. You are no longer a debtor to the flesh (no sin), but with The Spirit of God in you, you are His

Son (verses 12-14). You become an Heir with Christ, and will be Glorified when you receive Salvation, as occurred with Christ (verse 17).

CREATED FOR VANITY

When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden, God said that everything He created was very Good (Genesis 1:31). At this point, there was no sin. This newly created couple were living in God's Rest, The Seventh Day, when God had completed all His Work. They couldn't even die because The Tree of Life was there for them to eat – if only they had chosen The Tree of Life.

At this point, Adam and Eve had complete freedom of choice to keep living, or die. God's intent was for them to eat of The Tree of Life (Genesis 3:24). They, however, chose to die by eating the fruit from The Tree of Good and Evil instead of The Tree of Life, which gave Life. They, then, were removed from The Garden. They no longer had access to The Tree of Life.

Many do not really understand sin and why, as humans, one cannot stop sinning. The plain Biblical Truth will be explained. Read all of Romans 8:20-23, and you will find that God Himself created you to be sinners from the very beginning. Why? It was in the hope that you would eventually become His Sons and Daughters. In fact, the entire universe is held in the bondage of corruption, and inevitably will die.

All humans die. The same is true for everything in the entire physical

universe. Everyone and everything is subject to death. Even the stars are consumed by devouring black holes. Planets come – and planets go. The entire universe is waiting for a new dimension, a Spiritual one. It is the dimension where one cannot, and will not, die (Romans 8:22). God's Kingdom is a Spiritual Kingdom. It will be a New Heaven and a New Earth, where there is no death or corruption (Revelation 21:1).

SIN

Why do you sin? It is because in the flesh, you are corruptible so you will die. However, you are forced to struggle for life itself. You need to protect yourselves. You are in a Life-preserving type of bondage to keep yourselves alive. If someone tries to kill you, you will do anything to protect yourself.

When you are hungry, you will try everything to be able to eat and drink. If not, you die. To survive, you will steal food and water. You always struggle to survive! You, also, need to be careful not to fall, nor to harm yourself accidentally, or to die from a serious accident. You constantly protect yourself, your family, and loved ones. In all of this, you are much like the animals in God's realm.

This is what carnality is all about – the survival of the fittest. You are like any beast or animal who is struggling against all the circumstances of the environment which could cause death. The early bird eats the worm so it can live, but while the bird lives, the worm dies. You kill animals to eat

them. In extreme events, some will kill other humans to keep from being killed. God made everyone carnal – man and the animals.

Being mortal makes you fight to survive. And yet in the end, all are destined to die. You can't help sinning when you are striving to live. The entire universe has been created this way. You must protect yourselves, strive to eat, drink, be clothed, protected, etc. And yet, you still end up dying. You were created to sin. The entire creation is waiting for the Redemption of the body. Why?

Romans 8:21 gives the complete answer. **“Because the creature (humans) itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption (death) into the glorious liberty of the children of God”** (Romans 8:21). Now, you have The Truth.

When you receive Salvation, you are no longer subject to death or corruption. You will be at Liberty (as an immortal), and no longer subject to sin – or concerned with survival by protecting yourselves. The pulls of the flesh will no longer exist. God's Law will be written in your heart and mind. You will be Holy just as God and His Son are Holy or Perfect.

In the Greek language, the word “liberty” is “eleutheria” and “eleutheros.” When defined, they mean “freedom” or “unrestrained” (to go at pleasure). They mean “freeborn” or “able to do whatever you want.” There are no laws. There is no one telling you to obey them. There is no control except within yourself. This is Real Liberty and True Freedom. When you are God's Sons, you will be Free to do whatever you want. Does that mean

you will want to commit sin? God forbid, you will never sin – because you will never want to do anything wrong (Romans 6:15-18). You will be Holy, Good or Perfect.

Once God writes His Laws in your minds and hearts, you will become Servants of Righteousness! You will only want to do what is Right. Why? It is because you will be God's Son, as Christ is, who is Perfect, Holy, Righteous, and Loving. This happens when God writes His Ten Commandments in your heart and mind. The Letter of The Law – or any other Law cannot do what only Christ in you can.

The Apostle Paul, in Galatians 4:24-26 said, The Letter of The Law given at Mount Sinai can only give bondage or death. Those in The Spirit of The Law are Free, or have complete Liberty to do what they want. Only keeping God's Law Spiritually can give you Salvation. How can that happen?

SPIRITUAL LAW GIVES LIBERTY

Unless, and until, you allow God to write His Law in your heart and mind, you cannot be entrusted with True Liberty or Eternal Life. If a Christian must depend on a written “Letter of The Law” to know what is Right or wrong, then The Gift of Salvation cannot be given.

Only God is Perfect. Anything less doesn't receive God's grace (Matthew 19:17). “Liberty” in the Greek is “eleutheros.” The Greek term conveys “unrestrained freedom.” A Saved person who is as God, and a Son of

God, will only do Good just as God, The Father, and His Son, Jesus. One becomes a free human being, to independently do whatever they choose, by their free choice. You are no longer a slave to anyone, including your own carnal nature.

In this Life, you are a slave (Greek - “doulos”) allowing your total human Life to be mastered by Jesus Christ. When you are Glorified as Christ and God, The Father, you become a totally-free being as His Sons and Daughters (II Corinthians 6:18). You will no longer be a slave to anyone. You are no longer in bondage. You can, then, do whatever you choose.

God knows that since He is “all and in all,” you will always choose to do only Good. This is so, because The Law is now written in your heart and mind. Your way of thinking, as well as your motivations and desires, will be to do only Good – since God has made you Perfect – just as He is Perfect. This can only happen if you submit to His Will to become like Him – with His Law written in your nature, being and heart. Then, and only then, is The Law Truly Spiritual (Romans 2:14-15).

SUMMARY

Biblically, it is proved that today the observance of The Letter of The Law is not required for Christians. The written Law is only a shadow of The New Covenant (Hebrews 10:1). Only keeping The Law “Spiritually” pleases God, and this grants you The Gift of Salvation.

The Letter of The Law, The Torah, with all its legalism of Works, does

absolutely nothing to please God (Romans 8:8). The Holy and Righteous Purpose of The Law was given as a means to convert people – or lead them to Christ. That was the reason God gave The Letter of The Law under The Administration of Moses to bring one to death. The Law was given as a vehicle for unconverted, unrighteous, stiff-necked people to make them understand that, by any human effort, they could not make themselves righteous (I Timothy 1:7-10).

Once you see that you are a sinner, knowing you only need God through His Son, Jesus, to repent and have a change of mind, then, you become dead with Christ. The Law no longer has dominance over your Life. Now, after baptism which is a symbol of death, you Rest in Christ and God (Hebrews 4). His Son writes His Law in your heart Spiritually. That is The New Covenant (Hebrews 8). The Old Covenant no longer has any hold on a Christian.

All the shadows of The Law (which were never real), now through Christ, become a reality of The Truth of God. Christ becomes your Passover, or your communion. Jesus makes you unleavened or sinless. Only Christ gives you His Holy Spirit (Pentecost) – and then He makes you “one with God” (Atonement). The Works of The Law are only shadows and never were the real thing. They are only a reality or Truth when they come to fruition. This fulfillment or completion of The Law happens to Christians when Christ is in you (Colossians 1:27).

The converted mind now looks totally to Christ and the converted Mind is

Christ in you. This changes your human nature to a Godly nature by writing His Laws in your heart and mind (Philippians 2:5). The Law is now Truly Spiritual. It represents a Spiritually-growing Christian who lives in The Faith of Christ. Then, and only then, can God give you The Gift of Eternal Life. God will never entrust Eternity to someone who is not Holy or Perfect as He is.

Once you are Glorified as God's Son or Daughter, then you will have complete Liberty. There will be no laws required, because of God's Law written in your very nature. You will be just like Your Father in Heaven, and His Son, Jesus. This takes absolute FAITH in Christ.

CHAPTER 15

HOW FAITH SAVES

When Martin Luther advocated that Faith “alone” could save a person (without doing anything), it became the impetus to jump-start The Protestant Reformation. Since that time, hundreds of different denominations have formed, with each believing that only their own specialized ideas about Faith can give you Salvation. Therefore, you must ask the question: “Should this Faith merely be limited to belief in God and His Son?” Or, is there more to the story? Just how does Faith save you? Ultimately, each person must ask: “How does Faith produce Eternal Life?” Do you know the answer?

CHRIST’S SALVATION STATEMENT

Jesus couldn’t have stated it any clearer. He declared: **“Verily, verily [absolute Truth], I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life”** (John 5:24).

Without reservation, Christ couldn't have presented The Truth in a clearer manner. Jesus proclaimed that if you believe – or have complete Faith in God, The Father – then you will not die. That should be comforting to all.

But, there is more. Besides this great claim by Jesus, He goes on to report that you will not even be brought to trial in The Last Judgment. This is because, if you have that special kind of “Faith,” then you already have passed from death to Life.

How can a person who believes in The Word of God, find this formula any simpler? Can anyone understand “Salvation” in more basic terms than these very Words of Christ, The Savior? If you have already done this, and keep absolute Faith in God, then you have obtained Salvation!

ARE WORKS NECESSARY

Some Christians say that you can't “merely” believe in God and Jesus, and then automatically be Saved. They say that you must do good Works. You are told to perform righteous acts. In their way of thinking, Faith does Save you, but the idea is that there must be something more that you have to do to receive Immortality. To the natural mind of man, it does not seem fair to receive something of this magnitude as a Gift alone. So man's natural mind tends to think in terms of “earning it” – or at least partially so.

But, there is even more to this equation. Going further with this line of thinking, there are those Christians who say that you must follow The

Letter of The Law as the only avenue to be Saved. This notion goes a step further. You will probably be told by these well-meaning people that by doing so, only then will you prove your Faith. In other words, if you don't take positive action, then your Faith is not real. Is this what The Bible teaches?

On the other side of the equation, there are those individuals who feel there is complete sufficiency for Saving them by merely believing in God and Christ. These people teach that a person only has to "believe," and then Salvation is theirs. These two views are poles apart. So, this situation presents a basic problem of discernment. In all honesty, the question you must ask yourself is: "Which line of thinking is Biblically correct?"

ADMONITION BY JAMES

The entire Epistle of James deals with Faith. But more than that, the topic is Faith that Saves a person. Yet, in all this, you will find that "Works," also, seem to be a necessary part of the experience. James declared:

"Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith; and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works" (James 2:18).

What is James saying? He is telling you to prove your Faith. In order to do that, a person must have some "Works." The idea is that the "Works" prove that a person is Faithful – and actually believes in God and Christ.

HUMAN REASONING

Concerning the previous context, consider the following statement: “Works clearly prove one has Faith.” This means that, as a result of a person’s Faith, the evidence of that Faith is positive action of performing certain Works. By logic this means: “Without the Works, there is no evidence of The Faith.”

This basic idea can take many forms. In fact, today you will probably find a “Heinz variety” of notions about what type of Works can prove (or reveal) a person’s Faith. Is this the way it should be? When you stop to think about it, these ideas sound like they are being “added on” to a basic simplicity that is being lost in the process. Therefore, why not consult The Bible? What does The Bible say?

Some say: “Keep The Letter of The Law.” Others say “going to church, praying, and fasting does the trick.” Still others declare that “being pious” is the true religious answer for proving your Faith. On and on it goes with an accumulation of human reasoning about which type of religious Works are able to prove your Christian Faith. Consequently, many believe that if you have True Faith, then you have proof (Christ’s Words) that the right kind of Faith will guarantee Salvation.

WHAT IS FAITH

Many sermons have been given by numerous ministers over the past centuries to prove what Faith is. Paul said: “**Now faith is the substance**

of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen” (Hebrews 11:1). Paul said that True Faith occurs when you Believe, with certainty, that you will be Saved by knowing and believing what God reveals in His word will actually happen through His Son Jesus. This is The Bible definition of Real Faith. In other words, Your Savior, God's Son, declares to you how that Faith actually guarantees Salvation.

FAITH IS SPIRITUAL

Paul warned The First Century Christians to stay away from “philosophy,” or “the traditions of men,” which all come from the rudiments of the world and not from Christ (Colossians 2:8). The word “rudiments” in the Greek language is defined as “anything which comes from human effort.”

Jesus, also, told how a person is to worship God. He said that: **“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:24). All human efforts to become righteous – or to worship God by human abilities – are worthless. Paul states this plainly in Philippians 2.

Any Works that are produced by Faith must, therefore, be a Spiritual matter. Since Faith Saves you, then your Faith must be Spiritual – just as God writes His Law in your heart and mind by Spiritual means.

Faith, or belief in God, The Father, and in His Son, Jesus, and everything that God and Christ reveal through God's Word, is a Spiritual Entity (Romans 2:14-15). Faith is a total state of mind, or Repentance. Faith has

nothing to do with what you do in the flesh. The flesh brings you death, whereas, The Spirit gives you Life. Therefore, Faith only concerns the operation of the mind. In the Greek language, the word translated for “mind” is “pneuma” or “Spirit.” This is what gives the Life energy to your mind! It makes you conscious, with the ability to think.

When the mind is left to itself without Faith in God, it is free to create any belief that humans can think up. Consequently, many different kinds of belief systems have been invented. Since God has given you total free choice, just as He, Himself, has total free choice, then, it is up to you to choose Life or death.

Faith is a belief system, which allows you to decide to believe whatever you want. It is an act of free will. In science, it is called The World Paradigm. It is how you choose to see or understand what you have decided to believe. It all comes down to a choice of your heart and mind. This is a mental act, pure and simple.

GODLY FAITH

The Apostle Paul explained how there are three important Gifts, which God gives to humanity – Faith, Hope, and Love (“Agapé” in the Greek). Paul states how these “Three Gifts” are what Christians should seek:

“And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity” (I Corinthians 13:13).

It should be of interest to you that the three groups of Epistles written by

James, Peter, and John concentrate upon these same Three Gifts – Faith, Hope, and Love. It is even more interesting that these three topics appear in the same order as prescribed by Paul in I Corinthians 13:13. James talks about Faith, Peter explains Hope, and then John's theme is Love. Just check those Epistles, and you will see how those three identifying words appear quite frequently in each of them.

Now, Faith which comes from God by His Holy Spirit, is a Gift, which God gives to those who are repentant (Acts 2:38). Faith affects your heart, desire, motivation, and mind – to see things God's Way ONLY. Notice what Christ did:

CHRIST'S MIND

In John 8:15, Jesus told The Pharisees "...**Ye judge after the flesh.**" The Greek word for "judge" in this case, is "krino" or "put on trial." Christ explained to them how they view various actions by others, only as seen in the flesh. This results in unjust judgment. Their worldly view, or mind, only looks at things from a human standpoint. So, this way of thinking was their only method of judging.

But, Christ continued the discourse, and said that He judged no man. Jesus did not perceive things from His "human" point of view. Then Jesus said that His Witness is from The Father who tells Him how to judge (John 8:14-18). In verse 26, Christ would only report what The Father had told Him to say. Why is this?

FAITH, THE COMMANDMENT FOR LIFE

The reason Jesus reported what God, The Father, told him was to illustrate how He totally obeyed and honored His Father. **“Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour My Father, and ye [Pharisees] dishonour me”** (John 8:49).

Now, you can understand why Faith Saves. Christ said that He came only to speak God’s Words in order to give honor to His Father. Furthermore, Jesus kept The Fifth Commandment, which promises long Life! Jesus kept the fifth commandment Spiritually.

“Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee” (Exodus 20:12).

Since The Ten Commandments were written in stone (or The Letter), they could only promise long Life here on this earth. Israel had a carnal heart, and so they could only keep The Letter of The Law – which was written in stone. This promised them long Life here on earth only. There was no Salvation, or Eternal Life. So, The Letter of The Law could not Save anyone until God wrote The Ten Commandments in their hearts and minds (Deuteronomy 5:29).

With Jesus, it was different. It was a matter of Faith, or Spiritually honoring The Father, because of His belief in His Father. Consequently,

Christ manifested total Faith. It was a type of Faith that no human had ever manifested before.

SOURCE OF THE MIRACLES?

In this context, it is important to see how Christ said that, of Himself, He could do nothing. Twice, in one chapter, Jesus declared:

“...The Son can do nothing of himself,...” (John 5:19).

“...I can of mine own self do nothing:...” (John 5:30).

This is a form of double emphasis. Do you understand Christ's mind-set? In His mind, Jesus believed that He could, of Himself, do nothing. He admitted it outright. However, He had great Faith! He believed every Word of God. He trusted in God – and not in Himself. In His paradigm of “how He saw things,” He sincerely recognized that He had no ability in His human flesh to do anything. Jesus went on to say that He only did what He heard from His Father, or else that which He had “seen” of His Father:

“...I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me” (verse 30).

This same text shows that the judgment of Jesus was only to seek (or to do) His Father's Will – not His Own. What Faith! What honor He gave The Father! He had a complete and absolute respect for His Dad. Christ had full Faith and Belief in God, The Father, and only did His Father's Will – according to God's Word.

That is the next important point. Jesus did all this according to God's Word. It was God's Doctrine, as well as, God's Works. Notice how clear this is made from the words of Jesus Himself:

“Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me” (John 7:16).

What a powerful claim! This concerns the matter of doctrine, in addition to the act of performing the actual Works by and through Jesus. All responsibility is on the shoulders of The Father. And The Son trusted in The Father. Then, Jesus gave the last word. It concerned His doctrine and the source of it. Jesus said:

“If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself” (John 7:17).

CHRIST KEPT THE FIFTH COMMANDMENT

Jesus honored His Father, not merely in The Letter, but in The Spirit because He was totally humble like unto a little child (Matthew 18:4). He lived by every Word of God, and only followed God's Will (Matthew 4:4).

Christ regarded nothing in His human ability, but was totally in subjection to His Father's Will. This was for Him a state of “Spiritually” keeping The Fifth Commandment in His mind and heart. That is total, absolute,

and complete Faith in His Father – His Father, who had given Him Eternal Life. This is the reason this level of “supreme” Faith Saves.

By keeping The Fifth Commandment, Spiritually, in Faith, Christ demonstrated complete belief in His Father. Most human parents desire to receive this from their children. Any loving parent only wants the best for their children. Therefore, it pleases the parents when the children honor their parents by believing they would tell the children only what is good for them. This is the Faith process being developed at an early age.

Many worthy parents receive this kind of faith from their children, and that is The Faith God wants. God is The Supreme Parent, because God has an unlimited supply of good things to give to His children. Isaiah wrote:

“...neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him” (Isaiah 64:4).

This message is so important, that The Apostle Paul repeated this Isaiah text in his instruction to The Corinthian Church (see I Corinthians 2:9). This is extremely good news for mankind. Just think of the implications.

Having this great promise in mind, your desire should be to show absolute respectful honor for God. This is to believe every Word He tells you. That is why Christ is loved by His Father. He was the only One who had complete Faith in His Dad.

Consequently, Jesus sought only to do His Father's Will – and listened only to His Word. That is the kind of "Faith" that Saves humanity. This is, also, why, at Christ's baptism, God said: "**This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased**" (Matthew 3:17). Jesus always believed His Father. That is The Faith that Saves! Nothing else will do.

ONLY FAITH SAVES

Please read John 5:19-23. Christ said that, just as He honors God, you, by honoring His Son, will also be honoring God, The Father. God's Work is to believe on Him whom God has sent (John 6:29).

If you believe all that Christ said, and decide to give Him honor, then along with Jesus, you, too, will have Eternal Life (John 5:24). You will be living every Word of God – just like Him (Matthew 4:4). By doing so, you will demonstrate your Faith by your Works of living every Word of God. This is done, in, and through His Son, Jesus (Hebrews 1:2). Because of this Faith, you have passed from death to Life (John 5:24). You would have Spiritually kept God's Fifth Commandment. This represents The Spiritual Commandment for Life. God only wants you to believe Him by showing your complete Faith in Your Father, just as Christ did. That is all any loving, honorable parent wants.

THE SIN OF SATAN AND JOB

Now, you must analyze two opposite beings in order to understand the identity of their individual sin. This analysis provides an interesting

perspective. Job was perfect and upright, and one who feared God and hated evil (Job 1:1). But how good can an individual be? What was Job's sin? That is a reasonable question.

On the other end of the scale, you find Satan was a liar and the father of lies (John 8:44). He was the one who: **"...abode not in the truth..."** (verse 44). Satan did not continue in God's Word – and neither did Satan's disciples. Jesus said: **"...If ye continue in my word..."** (John 8:31).

Based on the perspective above, it would only seem logical that God would Save Job but not Satan. Satan was the absolute sinner, while Job was perfect and upright. Would you believe that both were guilty of the same sin? If that were so, then even if a person may be totally perfect, and upright, he can still be a sinner.

The problem with Job was that he was self-righteous about the good he had been doing through his own efforts. He lacked Faith. Only Faith can Save you through Christ.

Job kept The Letter of The Law by his own human efforts. He did not understand that only God can change a person's nature from carnal to Spiritual. Only God, by His Son Jesus, can change anyone's mind and heart to keep His Commandments. Only Christ in you, by His Holy Spirit, can do that. It is Christ's Righteousness – and not yours. That takes complete Faith in Christ.

Job finally learned that lesson and said: **"I know that thou canst do**

everything, and that no thought can be withholden from thee” (Job 42:2). Job finally gained complete Faith in God and was Saved from his miserable situation. Being righteous didn’t give him Salvation – and yet Faith did. Job believed that he would be Saved, but he finally understood that only God could Save (Job 19:26-27).

Satan wasn’t much different. He was a heinous sinner and liar. But he was even more than that. Satan lacked what it took to be in God’s Kingdom. Also, he didn’t want to believe or follow God. Satan lacked Faith.

However, just like Job, Satan was also “perfect.” In Ezekiel 28:15, God said that when Satan was created, he was perfect “in his ways.” Satan was a cherub, or a high-ranking angel of God, before he sinned. In both cases (Job and Satan), they were self-righteous. Isn’t that amazing? Because Satan was wise and beautiful, he believed in himself – just as Job did. Therefore, he decided not to believe God (verse 17). Satan lacked Faith (Belief) in His Creator – just like Job. However, Job finally repented – and had complete Faith in God – while Satan continued to disobey.

WITHOUT FAITH THERE IS NO SALVATION

In Romans 14:23, Paul said “...for whatsoever is not of **faith** is **sin**.” Then, in Hebrews 11:6-7, he also shows that it is impossible to please God, and until one has Faith like Noah, he cannot be righteous. Why is this? It is because God will give Salvation to no one who doesn’t believe

God, The Father. In your heart and mind, you must Spiritually keep The Fifth Commandment. In this way, you can be given Life or Salvation.

How righteous or good you are by means of your own human ability is not enough. Keeping The Letter of The Law doesn't do it. You can only please God in The Spirit (John 4), and therefore, you must believe every word which God, The Father tells you by His Son, Jesus. Only Faith, which is believing everything your Father tells you to do, can Save you. You must honor God – just as Christ believed every Word of God, His Father (Matthew 4:4).

WHAT WORKS?

What did James mean when he said: “...**shew thee my faith by my works**” (James 2:18). What “Works” are these? It isn't how good or righteous you make yourself feel by your own human effort, but how much you believe every Word that God reveals in His Word (Logos) by His Son, Jesus. Faith in your Father is what God wants. Believe your Dad. He is your Parent who loves you. That is how Faith Saves.

HEBREWS ELEVEN

Read Hebrews 11. It is The Faith Chapter, par excellence. Not one example of Faith listed in the chapter has anything to do with how good or perfect God's chosen people are. King David was a sinner, a murderer, and adulterer. But he totally believed God when he defeated Goliath. That is Faith in God.

Noah had Faith when he built the ark. It Saved him and his family from the flood. Abraham, also, was told to sacrifice his son, Isaac. He believed God in Faith that He would resurrect Isaac in order to keep His Promise to Abraham. This Faith was Abraham's Righteousness. He did whatever God told him. In like manner, you must, also, believe every Word that Your Father tells you to do by His Son, Jesus.

These are the Works, which prove your Faith – and The Faith of all Christians. In Faith, you believe Christ dwells in you by God's Holy Spirit. This Faith is Spiritual. Only God can give you that Gift of Faith so that you will be Saved.

The short of it is: "Godly Faith Saves." It has nothing to do with how righteous you can become on your own. Only Christ's Righteousness can accomplish that – and this takes Godly Faith (Romans 1:17, Gal. 2:20, Matthew 6:33).

By performing every Word of God you show God's Works in you. It is the believing and honoring of Your Father that forms The Faith that Saves. You must keep growing in that Faith by listening to every Word that God tells you in His Word. By this means, you grow Spiritually on a continuous basis as long as you draw breath (Romans 10:17).

CHAPTER 16

SABBATH IS A SIGN

Who is a Sabbatarian? There are those who say that only the first day of the week is The Sabbath. Others, such as those of the Muslim faith, say the sixth day is the Sabbath. Then, there are those who insist that only the seventh day can be The Sabbath.

Those who say it is the first day, do so, because they feel it is the day Christ was resurrected. They declare that Revelation 1:10 tells how John received his Revelation on The Lord's Day. Therefore, because of that reasoning, some believe that the day Jesus was resurrected, designates it as The Sabbath. They insist they are the real Sabbath keepers. Who is a true Sabbatarian in God's sight?

WHO DECIDES?

Is it possible to prove Biblically which day is truly God's Sabbath Day? Yes, it is! In Colossians 2:8, The Apostle Paul said that no human ideas or decisions can be rendered by means of the "rudiments of the world."

The Greek word for “rudiment” is “stoicheion.” It comes from the root, “stoicheo,” which is “to march in rank or order.” Religiously, it means “to conform to virtue and piety.” It is an established system or an order of belief. But what kind of religious piety is this? Paul states in verse 8, that these are religious ideas, which come from the world.

In other words, this is humanity’s system of deciding for themselves how they want to worship God. So, no church, minister, or person has any divine right to supersede what Christ tells you. Paul ended the verse by explaining that you can only depend on what Christ reveals.

In Matthew 4:4, Jesus plainly said that man should live by every Word of God. If God’s Word doesn’t reveal The Truth, then you need to be aware of all humanly devised religious ideas. But, that is not the case. So, the proper definition of which day of the week is The Sabbath can only come from God’s Word, The Bible. Quite plainly, and as usual, God’s Truth is simple. You should prove The Sabbath Day from God’s Word alone.

When deciding on a basis of human reason that Jesus rose the first day of the week, it seems irrelevant to determining which day is The Sabbath. This form of reasoning is, also, irrelevant concerning other Biblical issues.

WHAT PAUL SAID

Read what Paul had to say about The Sabbath. The entire chapter of Hebrews 4 explains which day is The Biblical Sabbath – and how to keep it. In Hebrews 4:4, you find that The Seventh Day is the day that God

Rested. Notice, the story back in The Garden of Eden about when God Rested from His labors. In Genesis 2:2-3, you can read about the length of time required for creating the earth. It was in six days. Then, it was on The Seventh Day that God Rested. This was the day that God sanctified to make it Holy.

God never sanctified any other day in The Bible. As Christians, you must live by every Word of God. Without any doubt, only The Seventh Day is God's Sabbath. None of the other ideas generated by man can fulfill this role of The Sabbath.

The weekly Sabbath is the day the Jews have always kept. It is, also, observed by some Christians. Jesus agreed with the Jews that The Seventh Day was the real Sabbath, even though they blamed Him for breaking The Sabbath when He healed many followers on this Rest Day (Matthew 8 & 9).

WHY IS THIS IMPORTANT?

The Seventh Day must have a very Holy and significant meaning, not only to Christians, but to God, Himself. In Exodus 31:13-18, God told Moses why The Seventh Day Sabbath is so important. In verse 13, God declared the Truth: **“...my sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a sign between me and you throughout your generations; that ye may know that I am the Lord that doth sanctify you.”**

Paul clarifies the matter further in Colossians 2:16-17. He said that all

The Sabbaths, including The Seventh Day, reveal that it is God who makes them Holy.

Why is this? It is because these days are only a shadow (or type) of elements of a future fulfillment. It concerns God sanctifying (or creating) Sons and Daughters as His Son, Jesus and Himself. It is a Sign for those who can perceive its real meaning and Purpose.

WHAT TYPE OF SIGN?

The Hebrew for “sign” is, “owth” (Exodus 31:13). It conveys information like a “beacon,” “monument,” “mark” or “evidence” regarding how God sanctifies you to become His Son.

An example would be driving your car into a town, and before you enter, you notice a sign is posted with the town’s name. Most towns and cities have a sign acknowledging that you have arrived in the district of that particular town or city. It is “the mark” or “evidence” that the town begins at that point.

If you were driving into God’s town, the sign would say “Seventh Day Sabbath.” That would be its beginning. Under the sign, it may state how friendly the town is by welcoming you. This town might announce that it is “where God’s people live in complete Rest.” So, The Seventh Day Sabbath is an extremely important time. It is when God reveals how He brings His people to Salvation by procreating Sons and Daughters.

There is no other day of the week besides The Seventh Day that God made

Holy. Any human ideas that justify the observance of another weekly day as being The Sabbath is completely bogus. Unless you live by every Word of God, and not by humanly devised ideas, you are not obeying your Father.

However, you may know what day of the week is God's Sabbath, but how are you to keep it? Furthermore, what is a real Sabbatarian? Remember, you have read how The Sabbath is to be a sign between God and His people. What kind of a sign is this?

You find The Sabbath is a Day of Rest. It is God's Day of Rest – just as He Rested in The Book of Genesis. But plainly, it is merely a sign that only God can sanctify or make Holy – as only He is Holy. Many times you mistakenly read The Bible, and only take a part of its meaning. In this way, you can miss its entire Purpose.

In retrospect, you have found that the observance of The Seventh Day is accomplished by doing no work. However, if you, as Christians, observe The Seventh Day by doing no work, then realize that God said this is only a sign.

You have proved that a sign merely describes something. Remember, The Torah Law is only a shadow of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). You read in Colossians 2:16-17 that the weekly Sabbath is also a shadow of future things. Verse 17 declares how the body is of Christ – and it is not just a shadow or sign like The Sabbath and its Seventh Day observance.

When reading Colossians 2:9-10, it is obvious that Paul summarizes the Purpose for his writing about this subject to The Colossians. In verse 9, Paul explains that in Christ (Colossians 1:27) “...**dwelleth all the fullness of The Godhead bodily.**”

In verse 10, Paul shows how in Christ you are complete – and need to do nothing else, humanly, for Christ. This is because Christ completes all that you need as Christians. It is the reason why Paul declares that no man should judge Christians concerning The Sabbath and God’s Holy Days, which are only a shadow or sign of what is true or real.

You may tend to forget that The Law, which God gave to Moses was intended for carnal, unrighteous, unconverted people. The Law was not meant for converted righteous people in Christ (I Timothy 1:6-10).

You should Biblically illustrate the identity of a real Sabbatarian. This is the same as defining what a True Christian is all about.

THE NEW TESTAMENT SABBATH CHAPTER

The Fourth Chapter of Hebrews explains the meaning of The Sabbath and how it applies to a Christian. The context about The Sabbath begins in Hebrews Chapter 3. In fact, you cannot understand the Spiritual depth of Chapter 4 without first obtaining the required background of Chapter 3.

The Apostle Paul said Christians have a heavenly calling through Christ as The Head Apostle and High Priest (Hebrews 3:1). In Hebrews 3:2-6, Paul continued his discussion by comparing Moses and Jesus, as both were

Faithful in their respective houses (their domain). In verse 5, Paul said that Moses' house, along with The Nation of Israel, was only to be a testimony (witness) to Christ's future House.

The significance of Moses' house (Israel) is discerned by understanding Israel. Moses' house was only to be a testimony or a Witness of what was to become God's real house under Christ, which is The Church. So, all The Law given to Moses, like The Torah, was not the ultimate Truth. The Law in its entirety was only a shadow, type, or sign of what was to come (Hebrews 10:1-2) that showed how God makes you Holy – to be His Sons and Daughters.

A testimony or Witness generally refers to a Will or a Promise for an Inheritance. Moses' house, Israel, was only a Witness of The True House under Christ. Moses and Israel became a sign of what was to come.

Colossians 2:16-17 informs you about this Sabbath Sign serving only as a shadow (Testimony) of the real Sabbath Sign, which was The Body of Christ, or The Church (Colossians 2:17). Just as Israel was to enter God's physical Rest (Seventh Day – no work) in The Promised Land of Canaan, so likewise with Christ, The Church enters God's Spiritual Rest in The Kingdom of God. Remember that The Sabbath, as a sign, shows how God makes you Holy like He is Holy.

The observance of The Seventh Day Sabbath by allowing no work to be done, is only a type or shadow of The Church entering God's real (or true) Sabbath – which is God's Kingdom (manifested by Christ's body). That

is the real meaning of Colossians 2:16-17.

Then, in Hebrews 3:6, it states that Christians are The House that Christ is building. So, The Sabbath is a Sign of what God is doing through Jesus who is building God's House (or family). This is accomplished by means of Christians becoming Sons of God – who shall become Holy as God.

From Hebrews 3:7-11, Paul issues a warning to all Christians. He admonishes them not to be like their fathers (Israel) who hardened their hearts. That was why God did not allow that generation of Israelites to enter God's Rest or The Seventh Day Sabbath – which was only a shadow of God's Rest (Colossians 2:16-17). God decreed that generation of Israelites to die in the wilderness – so they never entered The Promised Land or God's Rest (Hebrews 3:12-19).

In Hebrews 3:7, God calls The Holy Spirit to speak God's Word to Christians. The message declares: “...**Today if ye will hear His voice,...**” The Seventh Day is not mentioned, but the entire period of a Christian's Life is compared to “today.” Christians are told not to lose Faith or Hope, like the ancient Israelites who died in the wilderness.

Your entire Christian Life experience is to be in a Sabbath Rest – not just for one day a week, but your entire Christian Life. In Hebrews 3:12-15, Paul said that Christians should take heed and not lose Faith. In verse 13, Paul states: “**But exhort one another daily, while it is called Today; lest any of you be hardened [lose faith] through the deceitfulness of sin.”**

So the word “today,” Biblically, is not applied to The Seventh Day, but rather applies to the principle for a Christian that every day should be The Sabbath – or Resting in Christ. Remember, The Seventh Day was only a sign (or shadow) of Christ in you. Real Sabbatharians live The Sabbath Rest daily, while it is “**Today**” – with God’s Holy Spirit residing in you and making you Holy as your Father is Holy. That is what The Seventh Day Sign represents.

FAITH AND HOPE

You have learned that Faith, or belief in God, means to believe every Word that God speaks through His Son, Jesus. This is compared to honoring God’s Fifth Commandment. If you do so, you will receive Salvation.

In Hebrews 3:19, Paul said The Israelites sinned in the wilderness because they didn’t believe God, or have Faith. Then, Hebrews 4:6 declares that because they didn’t have Faith in their God, there remained an opportunity, later, to enter God’s Rest or Sabbath.

**Hebrews 3:6 But Christ as a son over his own house;
whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and
the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.**

Paul explains that in addition to Faith, a Christian must continue in Hope until the end. So Faith and Hope are two Gifts from God that flow one from the other (I Corinthians 13:13).

Hebrews 11:1 defines Faith as the substance of things hoped for. Faith and Hope are tied together when you believe God, and that He Promises something for you in the future. You have the necessary Hope by knowing it will happen. To this point, you are absolutely confident that you already have it.

Faith is the Spiritual keeping of The Fifth Commandment which insures long Life. When you Spiritually Rest on The Seventh Day, you are Spiritually keeping The Fourth Commandment, which is a Promise from God allowing you to enter God's Rest. What is God's Rest? Remember, Christians Rest in Christ daily, and do not merely observe The Seventh Day Sign.

GOD'S REST – A CITY

In Hebrews 4:6-11, Paul states that since Israel hadn't entered God's Rest, then, some would enter that Rest in the future. Verse 9 describes a Rest (Greek: "Sabbatismos," "Rest") for the people of God (The Church) that must take place just as God Rested on The Seventh Day with Adam and Eve.

If Adam and his wife would have eaten from The Tree of Life (perhaps an olive tree), then they could have remained there with their children. The Seventh Day would never have ended – just as Paul explains that a Christians' Rest in Christ is an ongoing event. For Christians, the particular day, seventh or otherwise, doesn't matter.

Plainly, you find that Paul states in verse 10 how, if you Rest in Christ, it is the same as when God Rested in The Garden of Eden. God's Work was completed on The Seventh Day. All Adam and Eve had to do was eat of The Tree of Life. But they did not do this. Adam and Eve could have remained in God's Seventh Day Rest just as Christians do, "today," with God's Holy Spirit. Again, this is ongoing, as a daily affair.

In Hebrews 4:1, Paul gives you an additional insight. This concerns God's Rest being a Promise, and until it becomes a reality, as Christians, you should not cease from Resting in Christ, right to the end. Paul declared in Hebrews 4:10 that Christians must cease from their own human Works every day of their lives, and totally Rest in Christ. Which day is The Sabbath for Christians? There is no specific day – whether the seventh, or any other. The original Seventh Day Sabbath (God's Rest) was only a shadow (or type) of a Christian Resting each and every day of their Life in Christ.

As Paul said, "today" (every day) in a Christian's Life is a Rest from human Works. This includes totally relying on Christ by the power of God's Holy Spirit in you (Hebrews 3:13).

As Christians, every human need in your lives should be left to Christ – in Faith. What you eat or wear, or your concern for your own safety does not matter. This is because you are at Rest in Christ. By Resting in Christ, God makes you Holy by His Holy Spirit. The Sabbath Sign depicts you becoming Holy as God is Holy.

GOD'S PROMISE

When speaking about Abraham's Faith, Paul reported: **"By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed [Fifth Commandment]; and he went out, not knowing whither he went"** (Hebrews 11:8). By Faith, Abraham sojourned in the land of Promise. Dwelling in a tabernacle is a temporary dwelling. It means one hasn't entered their permanent inheritance. **"For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God"** (Hebrews 11:10).

Very clearly, The Promise which is a shadow compares with The Seventh Day Sabbath, which was only a type of the real House that God is building as a Holy City (Hebrews 3:6, Ephesians 1:23, Ephesians 2:22).

Jesus didn't want Christians to worry, because He was building a place (Mansion) in His Father's House (John 14:1-3). This is The Promised Rest in God's House which is located in God's City.

THE NEW JERUSALEM

Where is this Promised House where God will dwell with Christians? In Revelation 21:1-4 John wrote about the future time when God will change the universe into a New Heaven and a New Earth. At that time, God will dwell with mankind in The Tabernacle, or House of God. In that future world, you will inherit the complete Sabbath's Rest. There will be no more sorrow, pain, crying, or even death. Christians will be at total Rest

(or Liberty) with unconditional Freedom.

Notice how this is not talking about one day, The Seventh Day, or any other days – but the subject is Eternity. Where is this place? Revelation 21:10 shows how this is Holy Jerusalem descending out of heaven from God. God will be coming to earth. True Christians will meet Him in the clouds. An example might be when you go to the airport or the train station to meet a relative or friend. No one goes to heaven.

God is coming to the earth, and will be bringing New Jerusalem down to this earth in order to dwell with men. New Jerusalem is this City or “Town of Rest.” It isn't any one day...rather...it is forever. This is the mansion that Christ is building for you in His Father's House. Christians will live in their father-in-law's house as The Bride of Christ (John 14:1-3).

KEEPING OF A SABBATH

Now, return to Hebrews 4 to learn “the rest of the story.” The problem with understanding who is the real Sabbath keeper (Sabbatarian) is the need to know the meaning of the words “Rest” and “Sabbath.”

There are different Greek words employed for “Sabbath” and “Rest” in Hebrews 4. All of them have different understandings or meanings. The difference in the Greek reveals The Truth of the intended context.

Paul states that Christians have already entered into God's Rest (Hebrews 4:3). What kind of Rest is this? In verse 4, Paul states that Christians have

already entered The Seventh Day Rest – just as in the beginning when God Rested from all His Work. Salvation was available to Adam and Eve.

They could have eaten from The Tree of Life, and received God’s Holy Spirit. This is similar to the statement made by Paul when referring to Christians taking heed when he said “today.” The word “today” obviously refers to this whole period of human existence where God’s Holy Spirit is available to humanity – just as The Spirit was available for Adam and Eve to eat The Tree of Life – and then to live on in God’s Seventh Day – FOREVER.

In The Book of Hebrews, Paul defines True Sabbath-keepers in a manner that is different from those who observe the legal requirement of The Letter of The Law. Rather, Paul reveals a Spiritual process that operates by Faith and Hope – with Christ in them.

Paul said that you had better fear, because you would not want to miss out on entering into His Rest. This is God’s Promise concerning New Jerusalem (Hebrews 4:1).

In this case, the Greek word for “Rest” is not speaking about the literal Seventh Day, but rather concerns The Rest, which Christians are presently residing in, as long as Christ is in them (Colossians 1:27).

In Strong’s Concordance, the Greek word for “Rest” is “katapausis” (#2663). The prefix “kata” is concerned with “to be.” The word “pauis” has the same meaning as the English word “to pause” or “stop.” The word

“katapausis” means something that for Christians, can be summed up as: “Christians find Rest or literally stop to pause in something.”

This Rest is “His Rest” or “God’s Rest” – as revealed in Hebrews 4:1,3. The word “Rest” in verse 3 is also “katapausis,” which continues where Paul said that it was God’s Rest – when God finished His Work. God is revealing The True Sabbath meaning to you in this section of text.

When Christians are baptized in Christ, they are dead like Christ (Romans 7:6), but now they are no longer under the dominance of The Law or death. They are in Christ, and therefore, in God’s Rest – just as Adam and Eve on that first Seventh Day when Salvation was made available to them.

MANY MISUNDERSTAND

Many misunderstand this form of Rest because the Greek does not mean what many believe it to mean. The word for “Rest” in Hebrews 4:9 in the Greek is “sabbatismos.” In fact, many Bible translations, in their margins, render the true definition as “a keeping of The Sabbath.” Some immediately jump to the assumption that it refers to keeping The Seventh Day Sabbath. But it does not. It couldn’t be further from The Truth. Check the Greek.

Strong’s word #4520 derives its definition from “word #4521” when referring to “The Seventh Day Sabbath.” This is only in regard to “a baptism” or figuratively “the repose” of Christianity serving as a type of New Jerusalem that is in heaven at the present time (Galatians 4:5).

This is the Very Promise given to Abraham. When a Christian is “dead in Christ” (through Baptism), then Christians Rest (“Sabbatismos”) in Christ.

Therefore, Christians enter into God’s Rest (katapausis), and because of that, are in Christ – and are totally at Rest from all their work (any and all human effort) (Hebrews 4:10). Now Christ is in you by His Holy Spirit, which in Faith and Hope, is the means by which you heed every Word of God.

Christians stop all human effort (Works) to be righteous – or to try and please God by works (Romans 8:8). Then, Hebrews 4:12 states how God’s Word is compared to a sharp two-edged sword that changes you. It cuts both ways, and reveals your true nature.

Growing Christians do not keep any specific day (Romans 6:14) because they are not in the shadow (type) of The Sabbath’s Rest (Colossians 2:16). Rather, of a Truth, they are actually experiencing God’s Holy Spirit giving them that Rest (“katapausis”) until The Promise (Hope) comes to pass – just as it will for Abraham (Hebrews 11:13).

Paul warned Christians in Galatians 4:8-11 when The Gentiles kept pagan days (Easter, Halloween, Valentine’s Day, etc.), they were reverting back to observing days again (Colossians 2:16). Only in this case, these are days, which The Jews keep as God’s Days, which God intended for the unconverted only (Galatians 4:12-28, I Timothy 6:10).

Paul further states that your city is Jerusalem in heaven. It is not like the earthly city of Jerusalem with The Temple where they were in bondage,

and required to keep Legal Holy Days in The Temple. These were all days that were a shadow of Christ.

When The Seventh Day Sabbath is to be observed, the Greek word is “sabbaton,” not “sabbatimos.” Sabbaton is only a shadow (Colossians 2:16), but The Real Rest for Christians is “sabbatimos.” This is to be “baptized into Christ’s death.” The True Sabbath Rest, where Christ is in you, gives you God’s Rest of Salvation.

CHRIST SAID THE SAME THING

After healing the man who was infirmed for 38 years, Jesus said: “**My Father worketh hitherto, and I work**” (John 5:17). This healing was performed during God’s Seventh Day Sabbath (Sabbaton) (John 5:18). Christ said that He worked and even His Father worked on The Sabbath (Sabbaton). The Greek word for “work” in this case is “ergozomai.”

This word goes beyond “ergo” or “human works,” but actually means “to toil” or “a trade.” In The Letter of The Law, Christ said that He toiled – which is contrary to the legal requirements of The Law. That is why Jesus gave the example of a man feeding and watering his ox on The Sabbath. This is real work (“ergozomai,” “toil”) (Luke 13:15).

Finally, Christ gave the example of King David proceeding into The Tabernacle, where The King took the shewbread (which was an actual breaking of The Torah, The Law). David gave this bread to his men because they were hungry, and yet they were guiltless in this act (Luke

6:3-4). Why were they all guiltless for breaking these legal requirements (works) of The Law?

CHRIST'S ANSWER

Jesus tried to tell them that The Father made Him Lord or Master of The Sabbath (Mark 2:27-28).

Christ asked if it is lawful on The Sabbath (Sabbaton) to do good? Then, He proceeded to Restore a man's crippled hand (verse 9). Of course, those in attendance who believed they must still keep The Letter of The Law, consequently, went mad (Luke 6:11).

Jesus said the same thing in Matthew 12:10-14 where He gave the example of doing very hard work on The Sabbath by pulling a sheep from a pit. He concluded His presentation, and then said that a man is worth more than a sheep. Therefore, it is lawful to do well on The Sabbath.

How does a Christian keep The Sabbath? It is done just like Christ – by doing Good Works – even if it takes toil or work. You should feed the hungry when they need food. You should heal the sick when they are ill.

You can always help the orphans and widows if it happens to be The Sabbath – or any day of the week for that matter. Christians, the Real Sabbatharians, keep The Sabbath daily, while it is still “today.” How? By doing good Works every day. You work (“ergozomai”) just as Christ and The Father.

RESTORATION

Christ came to Restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11). What had been lost was The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life – and everything else on that first Seventh Day which was very good (Genesis 1:31). That is why God's Work is to believe on Him whom He has sent (John 6:29). Christ came to make everything very good, just like that first Seventh Day in Eden. Christians do good Works daily, since they are the true Sabbatharians residing in God's Rest. That first Seventh Day was not a sabbath (sabbaton – shadow), but truly a Holy Seventh Day of God's Rest for Eternal Life. The Seventh Day, Sabbath or a shadow, did not become The Letter of The Law until Exodus 16 – Moses Law. When God made The Seventh Day Holy, He rested because He finished His work. He did not tell Adam and Eve to rest because they were already in God's Rest.

In Mark 2:24-28, you find that after The Pharisees alleged that Jesus broke The Letter of The Law concerning The Sabbath; Jesus said that David had a right to break the legal requirements of The Law. This was because he was doing a good work by feeding his men with the shewbread. This compares with the acts of Jesus by healing the sick. Why? Because The Sabbath was made for the good of man, and it is not for man to be restricted to any day, seventh, first, or any other, from doing Good Works (Mark 2:27).

How does a Christian keep The Sabbath, or any other day, by doing Good Works? You are to heal the sick, feed the hungry, and restore to humans

who have needs. This is just like the first Seventh Day when everything was Very Good.

If Adam and Eve were in that first Seventh Day's Rest by partaking of The Tree of Life (God's Holy Spirit), then everyone could still be in that Rest with Adam and Eve. All was Very Good.

Well, that "sabbaton" (sabbath) was truly a shadow (Colossians 2:16) of good things to come. While it is "today," Christians Have God's Holy Spirit. By this means, they are in that same Rest as God. Christians continue in that Rest by means of Christ in them by Faith. In full belief, they do the same Good Works as Christ. They help the sick, feed the hungry, clothe the needy, and do all other Good Works (James 2:17).

Performing those Works of helping humanity constitutes a real Sabbatarian. This is a person who has ceased from his own Works, and looks to that Sabbatismos (The True Rest) with God in that heavenly city of The New Jerusalem. This city will come down from heaven to this earth. Then everything will be Restored to complete Goodness and Rest.

THE REAL SIGN

This is the real Sign of God, which is His Sabbath's Rest. God Himself, with Christ and His Bride, will dwell in The Father's House. As Revelation 21:3-4 states, Jerusalem will be God's House where individuals will dwell with God and Jesus – and there will be no more

crying, sorrow, pain, or death. The real Sabbath Rest is that Promise made to Abraham and to all Christians. This is God's Rest or Sabbath.

The real Sabbatarian (doing only Good Works) will eternally live in that City of Hope and Peace. In the Hebrew, "Jerushalaym" is "The City of Peace." The entering sign to this city states: "God's people dwell in The City of Eternal Rest" – The real Sabbatharians.

CHAPTER 17

HOLY DAYS – A SHADOW

Many have written their human interpretation and analysis of Colossians 2:16-17. Some, in their exegesis, claim that Paul is referring to the Gnostic's influence of the day. Others try to make these verses refer to the sacrifices of meat and drink offerings. On and on it goes, with each individual stressing his personal agenda in order to get his point across. In the end, a state of confusion exists.

Why not try something different? Why not believe what The Apostle Paul plainly tells you? This Epistle by Paul is one of the simplest and easiest to understand – if you only pay attention to what Paul said, in Colossians 2:16-17:

“¹⁶Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath days: ¹⁷Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.”

In order to understand this, you should separately divide each part of these verses; so you do not overlook what is clearly stated in God's Word – The plain Truth!

1. **“Let no man therefore judge you.”**

This is The Apostle's first statement concerning the subject. It seems quite simple. Paul said that no man should judge these believers about Sabbaths, Holy Days, etc. That means no one – no minister, no teacher, no judge, no king, etc. – no one! Paul also said **“therefore.”** Consequently, Paul is telling you the reason why no one is to judge The Christians at Colosse. The key element is the word **“therefore.”**

This is because of what he just told them in this Epistle. What did Paul just tell them? In Colossians 1:26, Paul said that there is a Mystery that has been hidden through all past ages. He affirmed that this Mystery was not made known to God's people until now. Paul also declares how this Mystery was made known to The Saints of Paul's day. What was The Mystery? Realize that Christians today do not understand this Mystery.

The discussion and understanding over Colossians 2:16-17 is completely misunderstood Scripturally. Unless you understand this Mystery, you cannot understand Colossians 2:16-17. Remember that Paul said, **“therefore.”** Consequently, because of this Mystery, no man should judge Christians about the legality of The Sabbaths and Holy Days. That is Scripture.

THE MYSTERY

In discussing The Mystery, Paul describes it this way:

“To whom God would make known what is the riches of

the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles [not the Jews]; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory”
Colossians 1:27).

This is The Mystery defined by The Word of God. The Bible reveals that by Christ in you, which is God’s Holy Spirit, you receive abundant Spiritual riches. What are these riches in Christ that you, as a Christian receive?

Verse 28 reveals The Truth. Paul said that each Christian is made Perfect by Christ being in you. Then, Colossians 2:1-3 declares all the understanding of this Mystery of God. God, The Father, and Christ comprise the totality of all wisdom and knowledge. How plain can it be?

A Christian needs nothing else except Christ in you in order to be made Perfect like The Father and His Son, Jesus. Then verses 9 and 10 state the following:

“⁹...in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. ¹⁰...ye are complete in him, which is the head...” (Colossians 2:9-10).

Notice this concept, that in Him, Jesus, all the fulness dwells. This means that everything that God is – has been made complete in each Christian – as long as Christ is in you.

“Therefore,” because of this Mystery of Christ in you, it supplies and gives everything a Christian needs to be a Christian. That is

why no man can judge Christians about the legal requirements of The Sabbaths or Holy Days. That is your Bible's answer.

2. The factor about **“judging”** explained at the beginning of this chapter.
3. No man can judge because Christ is in you – this is all you need. Therefore, you are not to be judged as a Christian by the legal requirement about The Sabbaths (plural), Holy Days, or new moons. Why is this?
4. These Sabbaths, Holy Days, and new moons are only a shadow of things to come. If you know what a shadow is, then you will know why The Sabbaths, Holy Days and new moons are not to be judged by any man as legal requirements for Christians.

A SHADOW

The Greek word for “shadow” clearly defines why Christians should not be judged by anyone – even, other Christians. A “shadow” in Greek is “skia,” a “shade,” or “darkness.” The new moons, Holy Days, and Sabbaths are only shadows, but they are not the real thing.

It is like looking at a person's image on a wall that is only a shadow cast by the light of the sun. Keeping the legal requirements of these days never makes a person like Christ. They would only be a shadow of what Christ is. For Christians, these days and offerings are already fulfilled in Christ – and no longer apply to them as a prophecy. Now to the next point:

5. These Holy Days, Sabbaths, and new moons are only shadows of things to come.

SHADOWS OF THINGS TO COME

Here are other aspects for you to consider. This concerns the weekly Sabbath, and The Passover.

- a. The Seventh Day is a shadow of The Sabbath Rest in Christ (Hebrews 4:9-11). Since Christ is in you, which is “The Mystery,” then you are already in God’s Rest, and have ceased from doing your own works of righteousness.
- b. The Passover, the slain Lamb with blood on the doorpost is Christ who is already your Passover (I Corinthians 5:7). This is already fulfilled.

Please notice that, now, Christians take the wine as representing Christ’s blood. They, also, take the bread which represents Jesus’ body. This is done to show they are now married to Christ, as His Bride. That is why He died for His Bride, The Church, in order to show that He loved her.

- c. Unleavened Bread. There is no need to take unleavened bread out of the house, etc., since Jesus has already made you unleavened (I Corinthians 5:7). This

shadow has already happened to Christians.

- d. Pentecost. You do not need to keep Pentecost since you already have God's Holy Spirit (Ephesians 1:13-14). This shadow has already occurred for Christians.
- e. Feast of Trumpets. You are already Saved in Christ, and Christians do not need to be Saved at Trumpets (Ephesians 2:8). Christ returns with The Saints to Save the world.
- f. Atonement. Christians have already received Jesus as their atonement (Romans 5:11).
- g. Tabernacles. Christians do not need to dwell in temporary booths or tabernacles – because the human body is a tabernacle containing the consciousness of the person. Peter said: “...**I must put off this my tabernacle,...**” (II Peter 1:14). During The Millennium, Saints are already Spirit Beings since the time of The First Resurrection (John 5:24-27). “Temporary Booths” are a shadow of Israel's human Resurrection to come to Repentance and be Saved (Ezekiel 37 and Romans 11:26).
- h. Last Great Day. Christians are not judged in The White Throne Judgment. They are already Spirit Beings (John 5:24-29), and are being judged today (I Peter 4:17).

This is the entire context of Colossians 2:16-17. The Mystery of Christ in you gives Christians all they need as Christians. The Sabbaths, Holy Days, and new moons are a shadow of things to come; they came to pass in fulfillment by means of “Christ in you.”

These days all picture what Christ’s riches have done for you. For Christians, all these days have already happened. The meaning was fulfilled in Christ. Hence, these days no longer apply to Christian requirements.

It is amazing when you ask a Christian who believes they must keep these days: how come you do not sacrifice a lamb? They say, Christ has already done that as your sacrifice. Then, why do they not realize, as already proven, that Jesus has, also, fulfilled all the other days for a Christian? That is what Pentecost did for Christians. Christ has already Redeemed you. The Holy Days are only in force for The Unconverted and will not occur until The Millennium.

That brings you to Paul’s final point of emphasis in Colossians 2:16-17.

6. He said, “...**but, the body** [The Church], **is of Christ.**” That is Paul’s main teaching in Colossians 2:16-17. It is the subject of God’s Mystery, which is Christ in you – so that Christians need nothing else to make them Perfect.

Because of this Biblical Truth, Christians are not to be judged by anyone – because you, as a Christian, have fulfilled all the shadows in Christ. How simple this is. It Is clear and plain. Always, let The Bible interpret itself.

THE MILLENNIUM

Once The Temple was destroyed in 70 A.D., it was the end of The Old Covenant. A person cannot mix old wine and new wine together. The shadows, The Torah or Law, were The Schoolmaster to bring people to Christ (Romans 10:1; Galatians 3:24). These are all shadows of The Messiah. Once one is converted and baptized, a Christian is now in Christ and no longer can the legal requirements of The Law apply.

In I Timothy 1:9-10, The Law is only made for The Unrighteous or The Unconverted. This is a shadow of things to come. Since The Law is fulfilled when one is in Christ, then The Law does not apply to Christians. It only applies to carnal, unconverted people. Christians only keep The Law Spiritually. That is what The Millennium and The White Throne Judgment are all about. When Jesus returns, The Temple is rebuilt and all The Torah (or The Law) becomes a requirement once again. This includes sacrifices. Why is this? It is because Israel, now in The Promised Land, must learn by The Schoolmaster to finally come to Christ. That is what The Law in The Letter was designed to do. The Law will eventually bring all the unconverted to Christ – first Israel – and then the rest of the carnal world. This is how The Law brought The Christians to Repentance in order to have Christ in them. This is exactly how Paul came to Repentance in Romans 6 and 7.

Paul declared that "All Israel" shall be Saved (Romans 11:26). Then by means of The Law, all the rest of the carnal world will be brought to Jesus.

Once that happens, they will be in Christ – and therefore, no man will judge them about God’s Sabbaths and Holy Days. This is because those shadows will all be fulfilled in Christ, The Mystery of God.

Christians do not have to be circumcised on The Eighth Day because Christians are not judged in The White Throne Judgment, which, as you know now, is a shadow of things to come. This Last Great Day is The Eighth Day of The Feast of Tabernacles. The filth of their foreskin is removed when they Repented. They now become legal children as God’s heirs to His Inheritance. But, you as a Christian are being judged now (I Peter 4:17). All the legal Works of The Law do not apply because Christ came to fulfill (complete) The Law (Matthew 5:17).

CHRIST FULFILLS THE LAW

In Matthew 5:17-18 Christ made a major declaration:

“¹⁷Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. ¹⁸For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.”

What many Christians declare is: “Yes, Jesus came to fulfill The Law or keep it perfectly.” That is true, absolutely, but that is not what these two verses really say. Even though Jesus was sinless, and paid for your sins by giving His life for you, these two verses have a greater Spiritual meaning.

Read them thoroughly. Consider and study each thought about what each word reveals.

First, Christ said that He does not destroy or do away with The Law. Jesus came to fulfill it. The Law is never done away, but notice it is changed (Hebrews 7:12). Now, The Law is only to be kept Spiritually, and not in The Letter, which kills. The Letter, or The (written) Laws and legal requirements, have all been fulfilled – or completed in Christ. This is because they are only shadows, and are not really of Christ. If you keep The Letter of The Law, you deny Christ in you fulfills The Law. You lack Faith.

Jesus continued by stating that The Law remains the same until The New Heaven and New Earth will come down from above. However, at the time of The New Heaven and New Earth, there is a change. This is because at that time, Christ said The Law will be different. Why is this?

To understand the Spiritual meaning of what your Savior is trying to reveal, you need to understand the full definition of the word fulfill. The Greek word for “fulfill” in this verse is “pleroo.” It means “to satisfy,” “finish,” or “complete.” What Jesus is plainly saying is that The Law has a completion point – or as some would say: “fill it up” at a gas station.

That is why this completion of The Law does not take place until The New Heaven and New Earth appears. These are the exact words Christ is telling you in Matthew 5:17-18. What is it that you must understand about The Law which Jesus has to fulfill or complete?

To understand Christ's meaning, you must know God's Only Purpose for The Law. Reread Chapter 13 on "Is The Law Done Away."

PURPOSE OF GOD'S LAW

In I Timothy 1:5-10, Paul clearly defines for whom The Law is. First of all, verse 5 states that the end or goal of The Commandments is agapé or love (charity). This is a clear Biblical definition of the designated Purpose for The Ten Commandments. Their goal or Purpose is to bring Christians to God's Love. That is why The Book of Romans states:

“Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore [because] love is the fulfillment [completion] of the law”
(Romans 13:10).

In I Timothy 1:8-10, Paul explained how to use The Law lawfully (God's intention). As a Christian, you need to know The Law was not made for a righteous man. Once a person repents, is baptized, and then Christ's blood washes away the individual sins – that person is covered by Christ's Righteousness (Matthew 6:33).

The Law, therefore, is no longer required by Christians with all of its legal works. Why not? It is to keep The Law according to The Purpose God intended. It must be done in a lawful way. Besides, one must be carnal, unconverted, or unrighteous – as I Timothy 1:10 plainly states. Now you can really begin to understand The Purpose of God's Law. The Law, along with its entire legal works, was given to a carnal, unconverted, stiff-

necked people – because they sinned at Mt. Sinai.

The Letter of The Law of God is Holy, just, and good. But its Purpose is for unrighteous, carnal people. It is intended as homework to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24-25). Once Jesus fulfilled (completed) The Law for Christians, you are no longer under the schoolmaster to bring you to Christ. The Apostle Paul clearly states what The Letter of The (written) Law is intended to accomplish. The Book of Hebrews states the following:

“For the law having a shadow [just like The Holy Days] of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect” (Hebrews 10:1).

It should become Scripturally clear how Christ came to fulfill (complete) The Law. The entire Law is a shadow (type) of The Messiah or Christ. Jesus, The Christ, fulfills The Law for every carnal, sinful, unrepentant person. Once they become Christians, the entire Law is a shadow of what Christ represents. That is why He had to witness The Law to prove that He was The Promised Seed – or The Messiah, Your Savior!

Once you have The Law fulfilled in you as a Christian by Christ, you are no longer subject to its legal works – Jesus already completed The Law for you. You have already proved that aspect by studying Colossians 2:16-17.

The Laws or Torah in The Letter (written, legal demands) are no longer necessary. Why? Because Christians now have God's Law in their mind

and heart Spiritually. Christians are to keep The Law always. It is never done away but kept naturally in their minds and hearts so Christians know right from wrong by their conscience. There is no need to have legal works of The Law to let them know right from wrong.

Since Christ is in all Christians all The Law is fulfilled or completed in each and every one of you. Christians have a change of heart and nature. That is why Paul said in I Corinthians 5:7-8 you should keep The Feast. This was The Feast of Unleavened Bread, which refers to sin. Since Christians are unleavened through Christ, you keep The Feast by not sinning as the fornicator in I Corinthians 5. That is why Paul said you keep The Feast by not having the old leaven or sin. Christians keep The Feast not as a shadow by legal works as putting out leavened bread, but actually by not committing sin as the fornicator. Christians keep the entire Law or Torah Spiritually! They, Christians, are no longer subject to works which are only shadows of what God is doing.

Biblically you can prove how Christ Saves Israel during The Millennium, and then finally how all the pagan world will be Saved. This is foreshadowed in the remaining Holy Days.

TWO HARVESTS

Since The Law and The Sabbath and Holy Days are a shadow of things to come, these shadows are only for the unrighteous or carnal people. Consequently, now you need to examine all of God's Holy Days. God's Sabbath and Holy Days are a type of God's Plan for Salvation.

You must understand that all of The Holy Days are tied directly to agriculture – or Harvests (Exodus 23:14-16). That is why Israel had to tithe to The Levites who had no inheritance in the land. Tithe has to be paid only from farming income in God's Land. In Israel, there were two harvests in a year. One harvest was called The Harvest of The Firstfruits, or The Spring Harvest. This harvest was a small one, which you have already proved covers the period of time from Passover to Pentecost. It is the shadow of things to come, and applies to Christians. This is already fulfilled.

Once you receive God's Holy Spirit, an individual no longer needs to have a reminder of this shadow, because you have already been brought to Christ. It has already happened. Christ has fulfilled this part of The Law for Christians who have The Holy Spirit. Christians have now received their Inheritance – and are Sons of God – and Heirs of The Kingdom. No longer do Christians need a reminder of things to come – or a shadow. The Letter of The Law (or shadows) only applies to the unconverted.

Notice, there are two harvests. You have seen that The Spring Harvest is a “small” harvest. That is why Jesus said, “**For many are called, but few are chosen**” (Matthew 22:14). Then, in Exodus 23:16, the second harvest of the year occurs in the autumn. This harvest is called The Feast of Ingathering. The Fall Harvest is the “large one.”

The Spring Harvest of first fruits is small, just as The Apostle James said, “...we [Christians] **should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures**” (James 1:18). The Fall Harvest, therefore, represents only those who are

to be last (not first) – just as Christ explained (Matthew 19:30).

This last harvest, The Ingathering in The Fall, is huge. It includes the remaining bulk of humanity who has not been converted – just as The Christians who appeared as a shadow during The Spring Holy Days. The rest of The Holy Days do not apply to Christians – since they are already Saved. All who remain for The Autumn Harvest are the carnal and unconverted people.

Christians from The Spring Harvest will be with Jesus as His Bride designated to Save The Rest of The World – and to make God’s Holy Spirit available to them so they can, also, be Christians and Heirs to God’s Kingdom.

In John 7:37-39, Jesus stood up during The Last Day of The Fall Feast, that Great Day, and said: “³⁷...**If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink.**” Then He continued, and said: “³⁸...**out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water**” (verse 38). The next verse states that these Waters are God’s Holy Spirit. Christ said this Last Day of The Feast (in the autumn) is a shadow of the time when “the rest of the world” will be Saved.

These Two Harvests represent the total Plan of Salvation for the entire world. This is what Christ came to fulfill (John 4:14). Read the entire chapter of Matthew 13 for Christ’s complete explanation of this Harvest. This is how Jesus fulfills the entire Law, which is a shadow of things to come (Hebrews 10:1).

PARABLE OF THE PENNY

Many people wonder about the complete meaning of “The Parable of The Penny” that Jesus gave in Matthew 20:1-16. Christ, in this parable, discusses a farmer who hires laborers to go out into his fields to labor. In each case, he pays each laborer the same pay no matter how many hours they work. He pays each laborer a penny whether they worked from early morning, the third hour, the sixth, or ninth hour – and finally unto the eleventh hour which was almost quitting time. Each of them only received a penny.

When Jesus pays them, He received complaints from those who worked longer than those who worked only one hour. They reported that it is not fair for them to receive only one penny like the rest of the workers who endured the heat of the day. Then Jesus said, they had agreed to work for one penny. It was His to give or hire – and the rest is none of their business. From a worldly point of view, this doesn't seem fair – but remember – a parable has a Great Spiritual Meaning.

ORDER OF SALVATION

It is important to remember Chapter 14 in this book, which covers The Order of Salvation. So far, that order is as follows: (1) First comes Jesus – who was Resurrected to God's Glory. (2) Then comes The Bride of Christ. (3) Next are the two witnesses, Israel and Judah. (4) Then The Guests of The Wedding appear. (5) Finally those who are Saved out of

The Lake of Fire. Here are Five Categories in all – just as with the laborers in “the parable of the penny.”

There are Two Harvests, which include the five types of how every man is Saved in his order (I Corinthians 15:23-24). Who are those Christians who complain about those hired in the eleventh hour? These are all Christians who do not believe Jesus came into the world to Save The Whole World (I John 4:14).

How logical is God’s Plan of Salvation? Even some Christians today complain that they do not think Jesus should Save those who are in The Lake of Fire. But Christ said that it is not their decision – but rather that decision belongs to God, The Father.

Notice how the remainder of the world is to be Saved. This accomplishment is represented by The Fall Holy Days – or Feasts. These celebrations cover the last individuals who could have been first (like Israel). This group includes the rest of the world, as well.

THE SHADOW OF THE SPRING FEAST

The Seventh Day Sabbath and all The Holy Day Sabbaths represent a time when God offered His Rest in Christ. Remember, The Sabbath and Holy Days are only shadows – not real. They all represent Christ in you as Christians, and therefore, you are in God’s Rest because you received God’s Holy Spirit (Hebrews 3 and 4). So, all these Holy Day (shadows) represent God’s total Plan of Salvation, showing how God, through His

Son Jesus, Saves The World (I John 4:14).

True Christians are already within God's Seventh Day Rest because you have inherited The Holy Spirit. The keeping of The Seventh Day as a shadow, or Sabbath, is no longer required. Christians are the real Sabbatarians – because you daily do good works – just as Christ tried to teach The Pharisees (Hebrews 3 and 4).

The process to bring Christians to Jesus is revealed as a shadow, from Passover to Pentecost. At Pentecost, Christians received God's Holy Spirit and then entered into the reality of God's Rest. You are now Heirs or Inheritors of God's Kingdom.

You no longer need to keep “the shadow” of the Holy Days. This is because Christians have already inherited God's Promise. To continue to follow legal works, which is only “a shadow” of the real, is to deny that Jesus has already completed this part of The Law for you. The entire context of Paul's Epistle (in his own hand) to The Galatians was done because Paul said those Christians were returning to “keeping days and years.” This applies to keeping pagan days or God's Holy Days. Either way – it is a false gospel.

WHY PENTECOST SAVES US

In Leviticus 23:15-17, God directs Israel to keep Pentecost on an exact number of days from the middle of The Feast of Unleavened Bread until the specific day of Pentecost. Notice, The Law, a shadow, states that one

must count seven Sabbaths (or seven weeks) from Unleavened Bread to the Spring Harvest – which is forty-nine days plus one or exactly fifty days. Why fifty days?

The Bible answer is found in The Jubilee Year. The Jubilee is a Year of Release for Israel from all debts. For Christians, it is a release from personal sins. Consequently, you now become Heirs to The Promised Land (Paradise). Remember, all these feasts are a shadow of what Jesus is doing for mankind.

For The Israelites, who are unconverted, The Jubilee Year releases their physical debts. Then, they go back to the land of their family, which they had initially Inherited. This is the same as Christians who get back to the original state of The Garden of Eden (Paradise) in God's Kingdom (Matthew 18:11).

Leviticus 25:11-13 states that every man in Israel in this Fiftieth Year is returned to his Inheritance – and all debts are forgiven. It is The Year of Release. For Christians, there is no more sin. That is why one must count the fifty days from Unleavened Bread because Christ has made Christians sinless and without debt.

But notice, Pentecost is The Spring Harvest held each year – and not fifty years later during The Jubilee Year. Christians are set free and released from their sins ahead of The White Throne Judgment. Christians are Redeemed before The Jubilee Year. Besides Christ's Sacrifice, The Jubilee Year is one of the most important Holy Days for you and all

humanity. This is because it is God's Law showing how Christ Saves not only Christians but EVERYONE.

Leviticus 25:10 reveals that The Jubilee is a time of complete liberty – just as Salvation – and every man is returned to his Inheritance. Leviticus 25:24 states if and when you get into debt (or sin), then the land will be returned to you. It is the same for Christians, and they will be forgiven for all sins by their redemption. Then, verses 25 to 28 declare how this land can be Redeemed.

Sinners have a Redeemer, Jesus Christ. Jesus Saved you from sin and by His death, bought you back as an Elder Brother and Savior. Leviticus 25:48-49 states that a family member can “redeem” you. You are bought back before The Jubilee or White Throne Judgment. Christians will not be judged during The White Throne Judgment.

Christians are being judged NOW and Released by Jesus buying them back – and, therefore, becoming His property as Slaves (doulos). This is the meaning of The Shadow of Pentecost. You are Saved in The Spring Harvest as “the first fruits” in God's early harvest (James 1:18).

THE REST OF THE WORLD

It is clear that the keeping of The Holy Days for carnal, unconverted people is necessary. Even though Israel sinned at Mt. Sinai – and God wanted to destroy all but The Tribe of Levi – yet, His love and final judgment was just not to let them enter God's Promised Rest (Hebrews 3

and 4). However, the giving of The Letter of The Law turned out to be an excellent loving gesture on God's part. In reminding them constantly of their sins, the Schoolmaster would eventually bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24).

Paul in Romans 7 and 8 clearly covers how The Law, as a shadow, brings one to conversion. Once converted, a person, whether Israelite or Gentile, now becomes a Spiritual Israelite – and an Heir to The Abrahamic Promise (Galatians 4:7). It is time to see how the full extent of the world, including both Israel and pagans, are to be Saved by Christ. In the remaining fall Holy Days and especially The Eighth Day (which is The Last Day of The Autumn Holy Day Season), the full span of time culminates in The Fiftieth Year Jubilee. This represents the total Release and Salvation for the entire world (John 4:14).

THE GREAT FALL HARVEST

The first autumn Holy Day occurs in The Israelite's First day of The Seventh Month. According to The Roman Calendar, it usually occurs on the last part of September or early October. This Feast Day is called The Feast of Trumpets.

FEAST OF TRUMPETS

What does The Feast of Trumpets foreshadow? All Feasts point to Christ. Leviticus 23:24-25 declares that in this Seventh Month, in The First Day of The Month, Israel shall have a Sabbath, a memorial of Blowing of

Trumpets. It is a holy convocation – and no work can be done. What does this Holy Day, a shadow of things to come, actually mean in relationship to Jesus?

In I Thessalonians 4:14-18, Paul describes The Return of Christ. When He returns, this event is represented by The Feast of Trumpets. Paul said that The Trumpet of God shall sound with the archangel's voice and the dead in Christ (Christians) "shall rise first." Those Christians who are alive will be changed in "the twinkling of an eye."

Paul said this Feast of Trumpets represents Christ's return. It is when all Christians are changed to Spirit in order to rule on earth during The Millennium. Jesus said this is The First Resurrection (John 5:24-25). John, also, declared this message in Revelation 20:4-6. Since Christians have been Redeemed already, this is the time when Jesus returns to rule as King of Kings over the earth with His Bride, The Church, co-reigning with Him.

DAY OF ATONEMENT

The next fall Feast Day is called Atonement. After Jesus returns to the earth to rule with His Bride, The Church, then Christ, as King of Kings, brings back all The Israelites from the nations of the world in order to place them in The Promised Land.

At the same time, Jesus resurrects all the dead Israelites from the past (the so-called, "valley of dry bones" [Ezekiel 37]). King David is also

resurrected and is The King over Israel, just as Christ is King of Kings. This is Israel's time of Salvation as a nation (Romans 11:26).

All The Laws of Moses, in The Letter, with the newly built Temple, will be a mandatory requirement for observance by Israel and the world. Even sacrifices will be re-instituted. This situation lasts for one thousand years. It is a time-period known as The Millennium. Since Israel and the world have never accepted (or known) Christ, then, by keeping The Written Law, they will come to Christ, since Jesus and The Church will be “the supreme authority.”

Leviticus 12:27-32 states that on The Tenth Day of The Seventh Month, The Day of Atonement occurs. It is a Sabbath's Rest and a day to afflict their souls. It is a Day of Repentance concerning one's sins – with fasting and being humble. It foreshadows a time of asking God to forgive them for their sins. No work is to be done since it is a Sabbath's Rest.

Also, two goats are offered. These are goats that are chosen, because they represent two carnal groups. One goat, Israel, is still carnal – and must come to Christ. The other goat represents Satan (Leviticus 16:7-22). One goat is sacrificed as a sin offering for Israel. The live goat is released into the wilderness with all of the people's sins placed upon his head.

This feast is “a shadow” of repentant Israel coming out of the nations of the world to their Inheritance. They will be entering God's Rest under Christ and King David. They are carnal, and therefore, must keep “the full” Letter of The Law in order to bring them to Christ.

Satan, by going into the wilderness, will be under the jurisdiction of Jesus. Satan will be placed in hell (or tartaroo), which is a condition of restraint for one thousand years. During The Millennium, Satan will not be able to deceive the nations (Revelations 20:1-3).

THE SEVENTH YEAR LAND SABBATH

Remember, each Sabbath, whether The Seventh Day Sabbath, Holy Day Sabbaths, Seventh Year Land Sabbath, or The Jubilee Year, represents a time of rest. This rest can be for the people and/or the land. In each case, it is a shadow of what Jesus has already fulfilled as The Passover through Pentecost – or a future rest for Israel and the world.

Up to this point, The Church has been Redeemed by Christ and has no need to enter this Rest – since Christ has given to those who have repented God's Holy Spirit. Christians have already entered God's Rest, as in The Garden of Eden, and have ceased from all their works.

Israel, as a nation, will be Saved at the time of Christ's Second Coming with The Church and The Angels ruling over Israel and the world.

SABBATH'S LAND REST

When Judah was taken captive by The Babylonians, God said that since they did not keep The Seventh Year Sabbath, then The Promised Land would keep The Seventh Year Rest for seventy years before they were allowed to come back to Jerusalem (II Chronicles 36:21).

During The Return of Jesus, The Promised Land will have had its rest – and then Christ will bring back all of The Israelites from around the earth to enjoy The Promised Land’s Rest. This is during the time known as The Millennium. This one-thousand year period is known as The Time of Restoration when Christ and His Church will bring all of Israel, as a nation, to repentance when they take the first step by keeping The Law which will finally bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24).

FEAST OF TABERNACLES

Now two more Feasts to be discussed. These are, also, a “shadow” or a type of how God will Save Israel and the rest of the world.

In The Parable of The Penny, where the farmer hired laborers to harvest his fields, the farmer hired different workers at different times until the eleventh hour when the harvest would be nearly completed. In each case, no matter how long they labored, each received the same amount of money (Matthew 20:1-16).

Each laborer represented a type of an individual Christ is Saving, even those who only labored an hour before the harvest was completed. This is The End of The Second Harvest – The Great Fall Harvest. Until those workers who were hired in the eleventh hour had finished their task, they could still be Saved before the harvest ended.

Those who were called in the eleventh hour had to work until the job was completed at the end of the twelfth hour. All those hired before the

eleventh hour could be Redeemed by Jesus on Pentecost. Here is The Order of Salvation which will be covered more fully in Chapter 17.

The Feast of Tabernacles lasts for seven days (Leviticus 23:39). After The Seven Days of Tabernacles, there is one more day called The Eighth Day. This ends the harvest of everyone, those who labor from the eleventh hour to the twelfth hour.

These Seven Days of The Feast are a shadow, again a type of this one-thousand-year period (Revelation 20:5). Why are they called tabernacles? A tabernacle in The Bible represents a dwelling place. During this feast, the Israelites will build temporary dwellings to keep The Feast in Jerusalem. What are these temporary dwellings?

The Apostle Peter states, a temporary dwelling is Biblically defined as your human body, which dies. Read II Peter 1:13-14. This one-thousand-year period is when physical, temporary Israelites are still human beings. This includes all of Israel's resurrected forefathers who are brought back to Life (Ezekiel 37). This is the future "shadow" of things to come when all Israel is Redeemed by Christ's blood (Romans 11:25-27). All Israelites live for 100 years as prophesied in Isaiah 65.

After Israel begins to keep The Law, they are a witness to the Rest of The World. Finally Egypt, Assyria and all other Gentile nations are Redeemed by Christ's blood. Read all of Isaiah 19. It is a time when all Israelites will live to be one hundred years old. A newborn infant and the elderly will live for one hundred more years (Isaiah 65:20).

The Feast of Tabernacles, after The Seventh Day will end The Time of Redemption. Isaiah 65:20 states after their one-hundred-year lifetime, they are either Saved or accursed. When will these Redeemed Christians be Resurrected? In John 6:40, Christ plainly states they will be Resurrected on The Last Day of The Feast (John 7:37-39). This Last Day, The Eighth Day, represents the end of the harvest which is The Final Holy Day. What is this Eighth Last Day?

THE JUBILEE

The Last Great Day, The Eighth Day, is the end of The Great Harvest of human lives to be Saved. This is The Year of Release of the entire world from sin. There will be no more debts. The Feast which “shadows” this Last Great Day is The Jubilee or The Year of Release.

This Jubilee is a time that lasts for a full year. It is the time when all of Israelite debts are forgiven. Only Gentiles, or those without God, will not be Released and will remain in slavery so they can pay the last farthing. Read all of Leviticus 25.

This time period includes The Great White Throne Judgment, which is judgment for the entire world. Revelation 20:4-15 relates those events. First, Christ and The Church reign on the earth for one thousand years (Feast of Tabernacles) and afterward Satan is released to tempt the earth again. This is when the final battle between Gog and Magog against God’s people takes place. Christ and the angels destroy them – and The Final Judgment begins. It is The Last Great Day of The Feast.

This is The Second Resurrection represented by The Last Day. Jesus separates the sheep, which have been Saved, from among the goats. The rest are those condemned to The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:32-41).

Afterward, those who are written in The Book of Life (Marriage Registry) are invited to The Wedding Feast. When the people attend The Wedding Feast, those who do not have a wedding garment (righteousness) will be cast out – and must go into The Lake of Fire.

Jubilee is a time of plenty, which many call The Horn of Plenty. This is God's Rest or back into Paradise as it was in The Garden of Eden. Jesus, at this point, Restores all that was lost (Matthew 18:11).

In Revelation 21:3-5, God makes all things new. There will be a New Heaven and a New Earth. God, Himself, will dwell with His people. God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death.

No one will ever die; otherwise, there would still be death. Neither will there be sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain, for the former things are passed away. This is God's total Release and Liberty, truly The Jubilee.

Jubilee demands that all Israelites must be Released from their debts or sins. Every man goes back to his Inheritance. Anyone in debt can be Redeemed by a relative or Christ, The Redeemer. Anyone in slavery (or sin) is freed and given complete and total liberty (Romans 8:21). This is The Real Sabbath of God's Rest.

Notice, in Leviticus 25, only Gentiles are not released from slavery. As long as one is a Gentile or without God, they remain in sin.

Everyone else can enter New Jerusalem for The Wedding Feast – but not those who are still Gentiles. The rest are left outside of the city until they keep God’s Commandments in their hearts. Now, what happens to those not allowed to The Wedding?

As long as they remain Gentiles, they will not be in God’s Kingdom (Ephesians 2:11-13). These are those individuals who are thrown into The Lake of Fire until their Spirit in man and heart repents. When they repent, they become Spiritual Israelites and Heirs, receiving The Holy Spirit, according to The Promise, and enter God’s Kingdom as babes. Chapter 18 and 19 prove their conversion into God’s Kingdom.

This concludes the totality of The Sabbath and Holy Days as “a shadow” of things to come. Christians, who become Christ’s Bride are Redeemed at Pentecost. The rest of the world is Redeemed in The Second Harvest of Trumpets all the way down to Tabernacles. On the final Holy Day called The Jubilee is when everyone is Saved – including those thrown into The Lake of Fire.

CHAPTER 18

RICHES OF GOD'S GRACE

Ephesians 2:8 simply says: “For by Grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is The Gift of God.” The Apostle Paul declares that you are Saved by Grace by having Faith – and this very Grace that Saves you is a Gift. Grace is a particular kind of Gift that has absolutely nothing to do with you doing anything yourselves. Why does this unearned Gift of Grace Save you?

The reason God gives you this Gift of Grace is so you will not be able to take credit for any of it – lest you would boast (Ephesians 2:9). God doesn't want you to make the same mistake that Satan made. Satan went against God because he got carried away with his own talents and abilities (Ezekiel 28:17).

When Christians are given The Gift of Salvation, by Grace, they must become like a little child. You must be willing to be taught, to seek and to learn, especially from parents (Mark 10:15). God is reproducing Himself to become “all and in all” (I Corinthians 15:28).

When Israel constructed the golden calf, God was enraged and wanted to kill them. Moses felt so strongly that he tried to intercede on their behalf.

The Almighty God, with all His power and greatness, was willing to listen to a mere man and consider what Moses said. What humility and goodness God has. That is why God cannot give immortality unless you become just like God and His Son, Jesus.

There is nothing that humans can do by themselves. Any righteousness, or human attempt to please God, is totally unacceptable (Romans 8:8). Salvation must only come from Grace and Faith in God, The Father, and only as a Gift. The word "Grace," in the Greek, is "charis." It means "a benefit which affects your hearts" (Strong's #5485). It gives "liberty." The English word, "charisma," has the same basic definition. A person who has "charisma" has certain Gifts, which others do not possess. Why is this? What is it about Grace that actually has the power to Save?

RICHES OF GRACE

Paul gives further Spiritual insight into God's Grace and how it Saves. In Ephesians 1:7, Paul states: "**In whom [Christ] we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace.**" Grace, as an unmerited Gift, filled with abundant wealth.

The Greek word for "riches" is "plutos." It is defined in Strong's #4149 as "wealth or fullness, money, possessions, abundance or valuable bestowment." The riches of Grace bestow something of great wealth and abundance, which gives you Salvation. The Bible will reveal this mystery of the riches contained within this Grace.

BY HIS STRIPES

Grace is an Endowment from God. The end result of this Endowment gives Salvation or Immortality. Why is this?

Christians should not believe they have done good works, when life punishes them for the wrong they do, and they take it with a good attitude. Rather, a person should rejoice for doing good and are blamed for it – just as Christ was blamed for His good works (I Peter 2:19-24).

Peter said that Christians are called to suffer just as Jesus did for doing what is good. He left an example to follow (verse 21). Concerning Jesus, you read that: “...**when he suffered, he threatened not;**...” (verse 22). When Jesus was brought before Pilate to be judged, He said nothing to claim His innocence.

Christ went to trial before Pontius Pilate without any defense. Why? Please read I Peter 2:24: “**Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.**”

This is astounding. Did you know that Christians are healed by means of the beating (or the stripes) that Christ endured? He suffered for all mankind! Jesus submitted to this beating without a word of complaint. Why do His stripes heal you? Also, what is it that gets healed?

Whatever it is that heals you stems directly from the beatings He took. Those who saw the movie, *The Passion*, said that Jesus was so badly

beaten that you could hardly tell He was human. Read the account in the Old Testament about this beating which Jesus endured. Isaiah 52:14 states: “...**As many were astonished at thee; his visage [form] was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men:...**”

As violent as the movie showed the scourgings, “The Passion” was not violent enough. The actual was much worse. No human was ever beaten so badly. You could not tell if He was human. The stripes Jesus took obliterated all evidence that Christ was ever a human being. Yet, because of the stripes, all mankind will be healed.

WHAT ARE THESE STRIPES?

Isaiah continues with the account, and gives you the answer about why the stripes that Jesus accepted – are so important. The prophecies that Christ would be wounded, chastised, and bruised (beaten) was for Christians to eventually receive peace. But this would go one step further and show that those stripes actually caused personal healing (Isaiah 53:4-6). Peter states the same in I Peter 2:24, where he declares: “...**by whose stripes ye were healed.**”

The prophecy continues relating how all humanity has gone astray (sinned) by its own choice, and therefore, God has laid upon Christ the iniquity of everyone. There you have it. God caused Jesus to be beaten with stripes instead of you. These stripes really were deserved by all

mankind and not Jesus. Christ was without sin. He was totally innocent, and defenseless.

By Jesus allowing Himself to be beaten, He took mankind's penalty upon Himself. In what sense are these stripes capable of healing you? They were intended for everyone, and accepted by your Savior. For the answer to that question, consult Isaiah 53:5, where it says: **"...and with his stripes we are healed."**

WHOSE TRIAL?

The Biblical account of the trial and crucifixion of Christ holds many Spiritual Truths. Everyone is called to learn these great truths. In the movie *The Passion*, it showed that Jesus died on the cross in order to pay for your sins. But, why did God require Christ to die as payment for the sins of mankind? That is a vital question.

Before Jesus was taken, He prayed and said, **"Father, glorify thy name."** In response you read: **"Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again"** (John 12:28).

Remember that the word "glorify" in the Greek is "doxa," meaning "all of God's goodness and riches." By God allowing His Son to die for you, it revealed all of God's goodness for you. This is the Salvation of mankind. In I John 4:14 God sent The Son to be The Savior of The World. This was God's Goodness toward mankind. It was also God's Glory. Christ came to Save the world. How?

In reference to the voice in John 12:28, Christ said: “...**This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes**” (John 12:30). In other words, they heard this voice because it was for the good of humankind. Then Jesus made a profound Spiritual statement. He said: “**Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out**” (verse 31).

These are two significant, Spiritual statements by Jesus:

1. Christ's trial and crucifixion is not the trial of Jesus, but for The Judgment of The World. The trial conducted by Pilate against Jesus was actually putting all of humanity on trial. It was mankind's trial and crucifixion and not Christ's.
2. By Christ's death, Satan, the prince, the leader of this world is cast out. No longer will Satan appear before God with his angels to accuse humanity of their sins.

Jesus had interceded for the whole world and paid for all the world's sins. It doesn't do Satan any good to accuse Christians any longer. Now, Satan has been cast out of God's presence to the earth to fulfill Satan's wrath on the earth when Jesus won the contest by His death. Why is this?

Remember, there are three different Greek words for “judgment” in The New Testament. There is “krima” meaning “accused;” “krino” meaning “trial;” and the third is “krisis” meaning “turning point.” This judgment in The Bible only refers to The Great White Throne Judgment at the end of this physical world. At that time, Jesus is The Judge (Revelation 20:11-

15). Those found guilty by Christ are thrown into The Lake of Fire. The trial for Jesus was really The Trial or The Time of Judgment for The Whole World.

This is Vital Truth for all humanity to fully understand. This trial was not for Christ but for all of mankind.

DANIEL'S PROPHECY

In Daniel 2:36-45, The Prophet Daniel explained Nebuchadnezzar's dream. The dream described a huge statue of a man. Then, Daniel interpreted the dream by saying that the head of gold on the statue represented Nebuchadnezzar, along with The Babylonian Empire.

Additionally, there were three more Gentile Kingdoms. The fourth was The Roman Empire. Finally, at Christ's return, God's Kingdom will be established. At the end of time, this Roman system will be broken into pieces, and the entire Gentile rule in the world will end. Then God's Kingdom will take its rightful place on earth.

Pontius Pilate represented that Roman government serving as judge over Jesus. But, as was seen, it wasn't Jesus who was really on trial, but all of humanity. So Christ stepped in on everyone's behalf, and paid humanity's full penalty for their sins. Christ took Christians' place before Pilate by paying the full penalty of all the sins of the world (I John 4:14). As prince of this world, this was Satan's final attempt to accuse humanity for all their sins. Satan did his best to keep Jesus from being The Savior.

But Christ remained Faithful to glorify and show His Father's Goodness in order to win over Satan and the final phase of The Roman Empire. Jesus took the full penalty of mankind's sins by being thrown, in the Spiritual sense, into The Lake of Fire.

When Pontius Pilate tried Christ, and Jesus kept silent, he saw that Jesus would not even defend Himself. Pilate had to decree that Jesus was a just man and totally innocent (Matthew 27:19,24). After that, Pilate allowed The Jews to have their way, and so Christ was crucified. Why? It was because of Isaiah 53:5. This is a prophecy stating that Jesus was tried and why he was beaten as no other human.

⁵But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement [Hebrew, instruction] of our peace [Rest] was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed [Hebrew, "to mend"].

This prophecy by Isaiah reveals much about Christ's trial and crucifixion. First, Jesus was wounded and bruised for mankind's sins. Why did the soldier put a spear into Christ's side? The Law states: "**...the blood is the life...**" (Deuteronomy 12:23).

Therefore, by Christ's blood (which was His Life), all mankind's sins are forgiven. Why? This is because in John 15:13 Christ said: "**Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.**" Christ had to die for humanity's sins. This was the ultimate Gift of Sacrificing for all of God's created beings.

Since the life is in the blood, Jesus had to spill His blood for all of humanity. Why? To show His great love for you. As you have seen there is no greater love. This was Godly love totally self-sacrificing for your sins. That is why your sins are forgiven because Christ proved His love for the world (I John 4:14).

However, once you repent and totally look to God, then you are ready for baptism. Once baptized, your sins are forgiven. But how about future sins?

In Psalm 40:4-7, God said through David that God was not interested in sacrifice, but that God prepared a body, The Promised Seed, to be that Sacrifice. Once and for all.

Hebrews 8:1-13 states Jesus was appointed to a Priesthood, The Order of Melchisedec. Then in Hebrews 9:22-28, Jesus who sits on the right hand of The Father is your High Priest making intercession for your future sins as well. This was all done by Christ's sacrifice. This sacrifice, since He sits on the right hand of God, The Father, intercedes for all future sins. Christ died for your past sins by baptism, and also, for all future sins of humanity as long as you confess before Jesus as your High Priest after The Order of Melchisedec (Hebrews 7). Christ's death pays for all past sins, but also, all future sins by His one sacrifice. Jesus, The Christ, is also your High Priest who continually intercedes for the future sins of the world.

Secondly, Jesus was chastised (beaten) to give Christians peace. In Hebrews, the Greek word "chastise" means "to give instruction" or

“correction by God.” Later, you will see why this specific beating of Jesus gives peace.

Thirdly, mankind is healed, or “mended” by the stripes that Christ was given. By all Biblical evidence, Christ was not on trial while all humanity was on trial. Jesus took upon Himself all of mankind's penalty, by being bruised, beaten, whipped, nailed, and speared. It was a beating that no man can envision.

MEANING OF CHRIST'S STRIPES

Some Christians believe that Jesus was beaten, and the stripes He took were referring to God healing Christians in a physical sense. It is true that He performed many miraculous healings, and Christ, indeed, came to make mankind whole. But, there is a far greater significance Spiritually to Christ's stripes – and the healing – than merely the restoration of mankind's physical well being. Let Jesus tell you about it.

Christians should remain diligent in watching for His Return. They should do this by being wise servants (Luke 12:40-49). In these verses, He gives the outcome of those stewards who are wise; and the penalty for those who are not. He guarantees the wise steward (manager) will be made ruler over all that He has (verses 43, 44). Then in the remaining verses, He warns of the penalty the unwise servants will receive.

Jesus said the servant (Christian), who knew His Lord's Will and didn't prepare himself, and didn't follow His Will – would be beaten with many

stripes (verse 47). Those who didn't know better (Atheists, Agnostics, Pagans) would be beaten with fewer stripes (verse 48). Rebellious humans who didn't know better would be held responsible only for The Truth about Christ that they learned and understood. If they knew very little, they would receive only a few stripes.

Those who know a great deal about Jesus and God's Will, shall be beaten with many more stripes. Does this sound familiar? Christ said that He came to bring fire on the earth, and that it already exists. His conclusion is that He had to be baptized with the same fire (verse 49, 50).

Your Savior is telling you that some have to be spanked very hard, because they understand a great deal. On the other hand, those who understand very little, will receive only a small spanking. Christ is telling you that God disciplines with fire – and Jesus Himself was baptized in this fire. How? It was by the stripes resulting from His own beating. Jesus compared this to being in a fire (Hell-Gehenna). That is the painful effect of being beaten with stripes.

The Redeemer and Savior was beaten by stripes so badly that you couldn't recognize He was a human. The violent beating He accepted was not for what He did, but for all mankind's sins and transgressions. That is why Christians are healed (mended – made whole) Spiritually by His stripes.

Jesus took His beating and paid everyone's penalties so you do not need to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Christ went into hell and was baptized by his stripes, so mankind would be healed. Jesus died for you. He has forgiven you your sins, but He took mankind's penalty of The Lake of Fire

upon Himself. Consequently, True Christians do not have to pay the penalty. That is why the stripes of Christ's beating heal you. He literally paid the Christian's penalty so you can avoid being thrown into The Lake of Fire.

PURPOSE OF THE LAKE OF FIRE

Most people believe that God's reason for The Lake of Fire is God's penalty upon the wicked or unrepentant. They feel that sinners are either going to burn forever in this fire, or else be totally burned up and destroyed. Using human reason, they think this is God's Justice – especially since Christians try so hard to be good Christians.

Nowhere in The Bible does God reveal those who go into The Lake of Fire are there for justice, or for revenge upon the wicked. This is totally mankind's human reasoning. Let The Bible give you The Purpose for The Lake of Fire.

The Apostle Paul explained how The Corinthian Church, was carnal. The brethren were just like babes in Christ, or "very new" Christians. Those who were just starting to understand Christianity, were behaving like unconverted people (I Corinthians 3:1). They were playing Church politics. They divided themselves into groups and said the minister who baptized them was a true minister of God – while the others were not (I Corinthians 3:3-9). So, Paul had to tell them that all ministers of God are true ministers – having been given different Spiritual Gifts for their good.

I Corinthians 3:11 is a key verse. Paul said the foundation of Christianity is Jesus Christ. Afterward, Paul explains that whatever a minister teaches, upon that foundation of Christ, he will be “tried.” This was a grave warning for the entire ministry.

Then, Paul relates how the building materials represent the Christians who were laid upon the foundation of God's building (I Corinthians 3:12). These building materials are: gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay and stubble. The first three, gold, silver and precious stones, are preserved in fire, while some even become better – as with gold. The last three materials, wood, hay and stubble, all burn up in a fire. These six materials add up Biblically to the number of a man, which is six.

Revelation 13:18 explains the final human religious beast system to rule with the last kingdom before Christ returns. Six, six, six (666) is the number, and it equates to a totally human religious system – with false teachings about Christ.

Paul warns that if any preaching is done by anyone, which is not of Christ, will be tried and tested whether it is The True Word of God (I Corinthians 3:13). The Apostle Paul declares how this test will be done in a fire. Therefore, the teachings of man will be tried in that fire, whether or not it was The Truth or a lie.

The Lake of Fire has nothing to do with God's justice, or any vengeance which you might think Christ has unleashed. It plainly reveals that fire is a purifier, not a punishment for the wicked to be in torment or destroyed.

This is God's punishment to correct wicked beings so they will respond to God's Way of Life.

WHAT IS DESTROYED

Remember, human ideas and teachings will be burned. This includes agnostics, atheists, rebellious Christians, and everyone with their own ideas of right and wrong. It includes any teaching which human logic originated, or the total man, or human flesh which must completely perish. All these things will be utterly destroyed. Nothing can be left that is human – only total death.

Each and every morsel of human nature perishes. Human beings are corruptible and can die. Any human ideas, therefore, burn up because, like wood, hay and stubble, they will burn totally and completely (I Corinthians 3:13-15).

That is why Jesus said: **“...if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee:...”** He went on to say: **“...if thy right hand [work] offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee:...”** (Matthew 5:29-30). Why is this? Jesus answers: **“...for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell [Gehenna]”** (Matthew 5:30). Could it be any plainer?

But there is more. Paul makes it very clear and states; **“...if any man's work [teaching] shall be burned [Lake of Fire], he shall suffer loss**

[torment]: **but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire**" (I Corinthians 3:15). It cannot be made any clearer.

The wicked, obviously, do not burn forever in torment, nor are they totally destroyed. This is because Paul states that the wicked shall be Saved (Greek - "Salvation").

LAKE OF FIRE PURIFIES

Hebrews 12 is God's Correction Chapter, especially concerning those who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Read each verse diligently. Don't skip over any precious truth contained in this chapter.

After Paul finished The Faith Chapter (Hebrews 11), he admonished you not to miss out on Salvation – after having read about the many holy men and women of old who remained faithful until they died (Hebrews 12:1). The evidence is overwhelming.

He went on to say in verse 4 that none of you had suffered that much in comparison with those people. He compared their light affliction with those who had remained Faithful all the way to the shedding of their blood (martyred).

Paul said that God chastens every Son He loves. Therefore, those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are always loved by God. God continues saying when He chastens you, He deals with you as Sons (Hebrews 11:5-8). Otherwise, you cannot be legitimate, and Inherit anything from God.

God compares His chastisement to a natural father correcting his child. A

human father corrects his child for only a temporary benefit, but when God disciplines, it is permanent and makes you Holy. Very clearly, The Lake of Fire is to make you Holy, which is just the opposite of being revengeful – or for the sake of justice (Hebrews 11:9-10). This is true love.

Remember, Christ was chastised to give you peace or rest. Here is the reason. Hebrews 12:11 states: **“Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous [torment]: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.”** God only punishes to bring humans to their senses, so they will recognize and believe The Truth, which will set you free (John 17:17).

Paul said, **“For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth”** (Hebrews 12:6). The word “scourgeth” in the Greek is “mastigoo” meaning “to flog” or “whip” (Strong's #3146). How plain can that be? The beating and whipping are the stripes Jesus was beaten with, until no one could recognize Him as a human being.

The stripes represented mankind's penalty as demonstrated by Christians in The Lake of Fire. That is why those who repent and remain Faithful do not have any penalty, because Jesus took your penalty Himself, for you and all mankind. Therefore, you do not have to go into The Lake of Fire. This is truly one of the Riches of God's Grace.

In Hebrews 12:12-13, Paul describes The Israelites at Mount Sinai as

being carnal. God wanted to consume them with fire. Why? Hebrews 12:29 states that: “...our God **is a consuming fire.**” God chastens by fire, since that is what God is. The Lake of Fire is God scourging (stripes: Luke 12:40-49) the unbelievers and the wicked because He loves them, so they can completely repent and can, then, be Saved.

In Matthew 18:11, Jesus said He came To Restore that which was lost (The Tree of Life). Then, in Matthew 13:10-15, Christ's disciples asked why He always spoke to the people in parables? In verse 15, Jesus continues: “**For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.”**

Once a person has repented and is baptized, Christ must heal or Save them. He has no choice because He came into the world for that specific reason (I John 4:14). Jesus said that of all The Father has given Him, He should lose nothing, but should raise it up again (resurrect) to life (John 6:39). When is this? The answer is at The Last Day known as The Great White Throne Judgment (Revelation 20:11-15).

Since Christ will lose no one, The Last Day when Jesus resurrects all, it will include those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire. That agrees exactly with I Corinthians 15:21-26 when everyone who Jesus Resurrects will be Saved, including those thrown into The Lake of Fire.

The Old Testament states The Truth about the stripes. Peter also explains

that by His (Christ's) stripes you are healed. Those stripes represent God's correction in The Lake of Fire. Once a person has been converted, by being repentant and baptized, then Jesus must Save him. He will not lose anyone.

Once converted, Jesus is obligated to give you Salvation. That is why in John 5:24 Christ explained that The Faithful, converted ones have already passed from death to Life. Jesus Himself has taken on the full penalty of The Lake of Fire by the stripes He took upon Himself. Christians who remain Faithful, will pass from death to Life, with no debt or penalty. They are completely healed and restored to The Tree of Life.

RICHES OF GRACE

What are God's Riches of Grace? Christ shed His blood for you because the Life is in the blood. Secondly, He died for you (forgiving your sins), which showed the greatest love of all. Finally, Jesus took upon Himself the full penalty instead of your being on trial or being judged. He was beaten beyond recognition. This was so all would be healed or Saved.

What Great Riches these are in God's Grace, which is an unmerited Gift. All this is because God's Son, Jesus Christ, did everything for you and all mankind. His abundant goodness of love for His creation honors and glorifies God, The Father.

CHAPTER 19

EVERY MAN IN HIS ORDER

Many who study The Bible do not realize God has a Plan and Purpose for all mankind. Many do know that God's intention is to make all men and women into His Sons and Daughters through Jesus Christ. God is building a family that will literally become The Kingdom of God. Why is God building a family? Couldn't God have accomplished His Purpose another way? Why has God chosen to give His Creation Immortality?

According to The Apostle Paul, The Church at Ephesus was a Spiritually-mature group of Christians whom he identified as both "Saints" and "The Faithful" (Ephesians 1:1). Because these people were growing Spiritually, Paul could reveal a deep Spiritual Truth that had not been made known in past ages (Ephesians 3:1-5). Twice in the context of those five verses, Paul identified this deep Spiritual Truth as being: "...the mystery..." (verses 3,4).

Paul goes into detail explaining God's Purpose and Will before God, Himself, began to create anything (Ephesians 1:3-14). In all this, Paul reveals God's very mind, and His Plan for you. This is the underlying

basis for all that God created.

ALL THINGS IN CHRIST

It was God's intent with great love, to make humanity Holy – just as He is Holy. Before the foundation of the world was laid, God had Plans to make humanity Perfect.

Because of God's abundant love, He will give all that is within Himself. God could not have chosen to give anything greater than what God Himself is – and has. There is no greater love than His giving everything He has to you. This is total and complete love. Nothing has ever or can ever surpass it.

God predestined or predetermined you to be one of His very children by adoption. Paul said in his Letter to The Church at Ephesus: “⁵...**Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children...**” and “¹¹...**being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:...**” (Ephesians 1:5,11).

Since God made you human – and not yet Spirit as He is – God had to adopt you from a human heritage in order for you to become a Spiritual Son. Since God wanted to give all that He is, the only Perfect Way to do this was to give of His Own Being – His very Holy Spirit. God wanted all of you to become just as He is, and to be “all and in all” in your very being.

When everything in heaven and earth is subdued under God, then His Son

Jesus Christ will be subject to Him. When all things are put under Christ, then finally God will **“be all and in all”** (I Corinthians 15:28). God's Purpose is to reproduce Himself so that everything He Created will be Holy and Perfect – just as He is Holy and Perfect. God plans to give all that He is to you, and to every child He has ever Created.

HOW GOD IS ALL IN ALL

Carefully study each verse from Ephesians 1:3-14. Do this meditatively – which is a penetrating exercise of “thought.” Now, try to place what Paul is saying into a deeply perceptive state of mind. Be like little children who are thirsting to learn and understand God's Word. Spiritually mature Christians, who are The Saints and The Faithful, have been blessed already with all forms of Spiritual Blessings in heavenly places through Christ (verse 3).

Paul looked back into history. It was long before the universe of objects was created. There was nothing in existence at that time – only God. This implies that even before the physical existence of the universe took place, God predestinated and foreknew you to be adopted from the state of having human parents – to eventually becoming one of God's Spiritual Sons and Daughters.

Why? It is because it pleases God to give of Himself. With God's Love and Goodness, it gives Him great pleasure to share Himself with you. This is according to His Will. Since God is the sole Goodness (Matthew 19:17), it is the only Perfect and right Path God must follow. That is the

reason God said: “...**It is not good that the man should be alone;**...” (Genesis 2:18). Goodness must be shared. That is why God Willed to reproduce Himself. It is because of His Love and total Goodness.

WISDOM OF GOD

According to God’s good pleasure, Spiritually growing Christians become overwhelmingly blessed with wisdom and prudence (Ephesians 1:8-9). Notice that Isaiah uttered the same concept in prophetic terms. Hence it compares with Paul’s writings. Isaiah 46:10 states: “**Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done [future events], saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.” What are these future events? The answer begins to form. In Isaiah 46:13, you read: “**I bring near my righteousness: it shall not be far off, and my salvation shall not tarry: and I will place salvation in Zion for Israel my glory.” So God guarantees that Salvation and Righteousness will come from Zion or Jerusalem through Israel. So, who will be Saved?****

WHO WILL BE SAVED?

God’s ultimate intention and Will is to Save everyone in the world. That claim may be shocking enough. But there is more. It is possible to go on to declare that God has guaranteed it! Examine the Biblical confirmation of this bold claim!

“**Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am**

God, and there is none else” (Isaiah 45:22). How plain can it be? God declares: **“I have sworn by myself [God's Absolute Promise], the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return. That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue [all the world] shall swear” (verse 23).**

Understand this, no one is excluded? It is God's Promise. For God to Save everyone is the only righteous thing to do. That is the maximum scenario. God concludes this disclosure in verse 24 with the notion that even the angry or incensed will be included. The word “incensed” in Hebrew is “charah,” which means “to be angry” or “displeased” or “glowingly enraged in anger.” Even these people shall be ashamed (Isaiah 45:24-25). Wow! How plain and clear can this be?

God will Save everyone – even those who have anger and hostility toward their Father, God. It will even include individuals, who presently hate God. This truly is a loving Father. Those unpardonable sinners will finally be ashamed and bow down before Him. In this posture, they will repent of their ungodly attitudes.

Paul reveals this same mystery. Because of God's wisdom and His righteousness, He has revealed to Spiritual Christians, who have understanding, the mystery of His will. This is God's great pleasure. Why? It is the only right thing for God to do.

Paul announces God's ultimate Purpose, Will, or Promise: **“That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one**

[God “all and in all”] **all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:...**” (Ephesians 1:10). Who does God exclude? NO ONE! Even the incorrigibly wicked will be Saved. This includes those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Isn’t this amazing?

Why does God do this? It is because, as has been shown in Isaiah, everyone of every tongue or nation will eventually repent. God will bring it to pass. Now you can see that both the books of Isaiah and Ephesians show how all human beings who have ever lived will eventually be brought to Repentance and Salvation. What is the time factor for God to fulfill this Promise to Save The Whole World?

CHRIST MUST HEAL

Jesus promises that He will not lose one human who God, The Father calls to Him (John 6:39,44). This occurs during an extended time period where God can bring all this to pass. But there are many other questions. When does Christ become responsible to Save someone? How does Jesus know that God has called that person? Christ made the following declaration:

“For this people’s heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing [full of wax], and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart [a new desire], and should be converted, and I should heal them” (Matthew 13:15).

That is the time when Christ must Save that person. It is when they are brought to their own “individual repentance.” As soon as these individuals understand and believe Christ's words, which are God's words, and have a change of heart and confess they are sinners, then Jesus must heal them. Therefore, no one is lost.

Jesus Christ came into the world to Save it (I John 4:14). Ultimately, when everyone confesses that Jesus is The Christ, then they, too, will be Saved. Christ must Save them! Paul and Isaiah, both state that everyone will confess and repent. This is a process that will occur over a period of time.

Paul warns Christians not to judge new babes in Christ, or other Christians who are weak in The Faith. Why not? Read all of Romans 14. Paul tells you not to judge your brother, because only Christ can do the judging. He said: “**For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God**” (verse 11). No one is excluded!

Going further in his Letter, Paul warns Christians not to be totally focused on themselves, but to always think about the good of others. Why? This is because this is The Mind of Christ (Philippians 2:5), which will heal you.

The totality of that healing will Save everyone. Paul said: “**That at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;...**” (Verse 10). This is all inclusive.

Even Satan and his demons or fallen angels will eventually confess before Christ. No one is excluded once he or she believes that Christ Jesus must Save them. Let The Scriptures unfold this prophecy, which was done first by Isaiah, then by Christ and Paul.

ORDER OF SALVATION

Once a person is converted by having a complete change of mind, Christ must Save that person. He will not lose any person who repents. God, however, has an orderly plan for all this to take place. It concerns each and every person who allows Christ to heal or Save them according to the free choice of each individual.

Remember, God is reproducing Himself to be “all and in all.” Your Father, in Heaven, has absolute total free choice to do His Will or desire. He is not constrained by any one or any thing. Likewise, you, this very day, have that same choice.

When God Resurrects, He does so only to give Life. In this process, I Corinthians 15 is The Resurrection Chapter which gives the order of Salvation. God is The God of the Living and not of the dead. On the other hand, Satan is the god of the dead (Hebrews 2:14). Christ said that, regarding The Resurrection or The Great White Throne Judgment, “**...God is not the God of the dead, but of the living**” (Matthew 22:32). God, The Father would not resurrect people, in order to kill them, but resurrects them to give them Life Eternal!

In I Corinthians 15:22-23, Paul explains these things to the carnal Corinthians, some of whom did not believe there would ever be a Resurrection. Paul said: **“For as in Adam, all [his posterity: the world] die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive”** (verse 22). Following this statement, Paul goes on to declare: **“²³But every man in his own order:...”** will be Saved in Christ. Notice, there is a sense of order, or sequence, which God uses to give Salvation.

How does Christ Save you once you repent and are baptized (Acts 2:38)? It is by means of Jesus giving you His Holy Spirit which is **“...Christ in you, the hope of glory:...”** (Colossians 1:27). Through The Holy Spirit, you are literally “sealed,” so you can receive your Inheritance (Ephesians 2:13-14). Jesus said,

“Verily, Verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word [God's Words], and believeth [have faith] on him that sent me [God], hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation [Judgment]; but is passed from death to life” (John 5:24).

WHAT IS DEATH?

Christ's Promise absolutely guarantees that Faithful Christians who follow every Word of God (Matthew 4:4) will MISS DEATH, ultimately. They will not be judged or condemned. As long as you believe in Christ and are Faithful, this accomplishes God's Work (John 6:29). Jesus must Save you. That is an absolute.

If Spiritually growing Christians do not die, then what is the method for their redemption? Remember when Lazarus, the brother of Martha and Mary, died, they called on Christ to help. Read the entire account of this apparent tragedy that led up to The Resurrection of Lazarus (John 11:1-45).

Christ took four days to arrive on the scene. Why was this? When His disciples asked where they were going, He replied, “**Our friend Lazarus sleepeth;**” (John 11:11). So there was no sense of urgency. The disciples thought that if Lazarus were asleep, then he would wake up and be fine.

But, then, Jesus said, “**Lazarus is dead**” (verse 14). It is obvious, by comparing these statements, that Christ did not look upon the death of Lazarus as literally being dead, per se, but only as being asleep. Then Christ said, “**...I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth [Faith] in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:...**” (verse 25). Christ is telling you that when Spiritual Christians die, they are only asleep – and will be Resurrected. They will pass from death to Life.

Now consider Paul. He made a profound statement when he said: “**...as it is appointed** [Greek: “reserved”] **unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:...**” (Hebrews 9:27). The Greek word for “judgment” is “krisis” – or “The Great White Throne final Judgment.” So, it is obvious that no one can die more than once. But Lazarus died twice. He died once before Christ resurrected him after he was dead for four days. Then, when he lived out his human existence, he died again and is still waiting for The Resurrection. So Lazarus literally died twice.

In I Corinthians 15:18, Paul is speaking about Christians who have died, and are only asleep – not really dead. So, those individuals who are “in Christ” only die once, and are considered asleep – but not dead. If Lazarus died twice, and Christians are considered to be asleep, then the appointment that everyone will die once must be a different kind of death than merely that of the body. That is what Nicodemus did not understand when Christ said, **“That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit.”** Read John 3. The flesh has nothing to do with The Resurrection to Life. The body becomes dust or ashes.

KILL THE BODY

In Matthew 10:28, Jesus stated, **“And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.”** The Greek word for “hell” in this case is “Gehenna.”

Many people believe the soul is immortal. But clearly, Christ said the soul can be destroyed. In addition, Jesus said the body can also be destroyed in The Lake of Fire. So, God can destroy both your soul and your body in the burning hell.

Examining the Greek gives a much simpler and a more logical understanding. The English word for “soul” in the Greek language is “psuche” or “breath.” In the Hebrew language, the word for “soul” is “ruak.” Both mean “the breath of life.” When Adam was created, God

breathed into his nostrils, and Adam became a living soul (Genesis 2:7). So, Adam was a “breathing, living being.”

The “soul” is not immortal. God started Adam’s life by merely breathing His own breath into Adam’s nostrils – and the body started to live. It is very similar to resuscitating an individual whose heart has stopped. This is done by breathing air into the person’s nose or mouth.

Once the lungs and heart start the blood flowing, this is the energizing fuel for the body. Then, the human consciousness begins to function – and the person continues to live. The Greek word “psuche” has the same significance as the “ruak” word in Hebrew.

This is the one common factor in humans and animals. Humans are of the animal kingdom, and function by the breath of life, or soul. Biblically, the word “soul,” therefore, merely means “a living being.” All animals struggle to exist by survival of the fittest. The breath, which creates the “soul,” ceases when you die.

SPIRIT OF MAN

Humanity, however, has one additional source of life energy. It is known in The Bible as The Spirit “in man.” In I Corinthians 2:11, Paul said:

“For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.”

The Greek word for “Spirit” is “pneuma.” It also means “breath,” but rather than giving Life, it conveys the rational thought of humanity. Animals do not hold “pneuma” in common with man. Animals function by instinct and not reason. Descartes said; “I think; therefore, I am.” He recognized the human body is not you, but your act of knowing you are conscious, makes you aware that you exist.

What is this consciousness? When your brain is energized by your Spirit, “pneuma,” your mind begins to function, and you have the capability to reason just like God. A good example was Moses at Mount Sinai reasoning and asking God not to consume the sinful nation of Israel. Consciousness gives humanity the ability to think logically, and unlike animals, man can be creative.

Christ said: **“Don’t fear those who can destroy your body.”** The Greek word for “body” is “soma,” which is your physiological makeup as a human. But you, like animals, have a “psuche,” which is “a breath of life” or oxygen that supplies your life’s blood, and makes you alive and able to function as a human.

However, you are different from animals in that your brain was given “The Spirit” of man. This Life energy from God causes you to have the capacity to be logical and therefore, exercise the ability to reason. Finally, in this analysis, you must come to understand which death it is that every human being must experience prior to The Judgment.

YOUR BODY CONTINUALLY CHANGES

In The Resurrection Chapter, Paul explains how your mortal body must put on immortality – thus becoming an immortal body (I Corinthians 15:53). What does The Bible mean when it declares that you, as a human, are mortal? To be mortal, means you can and will die. But, in the Greek language, the word “mortal” carries a much greater meaning. The English word, “mortal,” is translated from “thanetos” which in the Greek means “one in change” or “dying.” It is an active tense “to be in the process of.” Therefore, you are mortal by having human bodies (“soma”), which are constantly changing, and are in the ongoing process of dying. Many body cells die every day. It is said that every seven years, the complete body has been replaced and literally renewed by this process.

So obviously, when you were a baby you had a different body than as a teenager or a young adult. More than that, when you are elderly, your body is already closing in on the process of dying. Being mortal means that you can get sick and die. You are not whole, or not completely whole, as God and Christ are.

Mortality is incomplete. It isn't whole. God is complete, and therefore, has Life Eternal. God is the same yesterday, today and forever (Hebrews 13:8). God changes not. He is immortal, and so is His Son (Malachi 3:6). God, The Father, and Jesus, The Son, are both Spirit or “pneuma,” and have “Hagio's Pneuma” or Holy Spirit. It cannot die or change, but is Eternal or Immortal.

WHAT MUST DIE

Now to answer the question: “What must die only once, and then comes The Judgment?” You know how the body or the flesh can die and then be resurrected, more than once, just as with Lazarus. But now it is time to come to understand why the act of repentance is so important to Salvation.

The Law has dominion over humanity as long as you are alive (Romans 7:1). Does that mean Christians are subject to The Letter or the legalism of The Law as long as you live? No! Absolutely not! Paul continues:

“Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another [Christ, with The New Covenant, not The Old Covenant], even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God” (Romans 7:4).

The legal requirement of The Letter of The Law allowed divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1). The woman could be sold as property for sexual purposes of reproduction. In this context, it would be helpful to reread the chapter on Marriage in God's Puzzle Solved, regarding Satan's system of marriage. Remember, the word in Hebrew for “marriage” is the same as is found in The Law of Deuteronomy 24:1. This word is “Baal.”

You are dead by Christ's death, and so, you are married to Jesus, The Groom, under God's Law of Love, and are married forever. So The Letter of The Law, with its legal works, is no longer required for Christians.

Christ died for all mankind. But what is it that must “die only once” for you to be married to Christ?

Romans 7:5-6 states that when you live by the flesh (Greek “sarx” or “beastly”), the desire of sin, which The Law demanded, worked in your members unto death. The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). You are delivered from death by The Law because you are dead. The Law no longer has any legal requirement for you (verse 6). Why is this?

From now on, you are directed to serve it in the “newness” of Spirit (pneuma), and not according to the “oldness” of The Letter. There it is. It is a Spiritual matter, and not a physical or fleshly matter.

DELIVERANCE

Paul reveals that he serves two laws. He must be continually at war with his fleshly carnal body, but he delights in The Law of God (Romans 7:21-25). Where? It is in his inward man (Romans 6:22).

In verse 24, Paul asks, “**...who shall deliver me from the body [soma] of this death?**” Thankfully, in verse 25, he goes on to reveal that in his mind he serves God’s Law, “Spiritually,” but with his flesh (sarx: beastly), he serves the law of sin.

How do you serve God? It is not in the body of flesh, but in your mind of The Spirit (pneuma). What dies? It is not primarily the body of flesh, but rather something that happens to your mind (The Spirit – pneuma).

To God it isn't the resurrection of the body of the flesh that Saves you, but it is more a matter of your Spirit (pneuma), which has the capacity to think rationally. This does not occur as long as your mind and heart are blinded. Therefore, what must die?

In Romans 8:6, Paul declared that to be carnally minded (beast-like) is death, but to be Spiritually minded is Life and peace. What has to die? Your carnal mind or heart – your human heart must go. Look what Christ revealed. It is actually something in your human heart that is corrupting you. The body (soma) of the flesh (sarx, beastly) is not the problem. It is just weak, as Christ said:

“¹⁸But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

¹⁹For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness [lies], blasphemies: [against God]” (Matthew 15:18-19).

The culprit is the human carnal heart. The body and the flesh are weak, and, therefore, follow the choices of one's carnal heart. It is the thinking process which dominates. From the very beginning, all that God wanted was for you to have a heart which keeps His Commandments Spiritually.

That is why God added “nothing more” for Israel to do at Mt. Sinai. This only lasted until they sinned, and then God had to give them The Law of Works. These were legal requirements imposed as a bondage until Christ

came with a better Covenant. This New Covenant gave Life, and not death (Deuteronomy 5:29).

So, what must die? It is your human carnal heart. Your Spirit (pneuma) must be changed. You must change your mind from human reasoning that follows Satan, to become Spiritual as God who is a Spirit (John 4). Therefore, you only worship God Spiritually in your “pneuma” called The Spirit “in man.”

The thinking process must be changed from carnal (self-preservation) to God’s way of thinking through love (agapé). The carnal mind must die, but only once! You must not, as some religions believe, “follow your heart,” which applies to the reasoning process, and can only lead to your death.

WHY IS REPENTANCE NECESSARY?

When Jesus explained to Nicodemus how he must be “born again,” Nicodemus was preoccupied with the idea that Jesus meant the body of flesh had to become different. But Christ said, “No” (John 3). Christ explained, “**That which is born of the flesh [sarx, beastly] is flesh;**” (John 3:6).

As long as people remain human, they are limited. Once you are born of the Spirit, you are a “Spirit” – and no longer just a human being. That is why Jesus said that until you are born of water (baptism) and of The Spirit (Holy Spirit), you cannot enter into The Kingdom of God. There are two

requirements: water baptism and receiving God's Holy Spirit. Why?

John, The Baptist, prepared Christ's way. How was this? John was baptizing people (John 3:23-25). Why did he do this? John's disciples disputed with him about "purifying." Baptism is a method of purifying, by putting something to death (verse 25). But there is much more.

John was baptizing in the Jordan River while people were confessing their sins (Matthew 3:6). Remember that baptism is a method of becoming pure by being cleansed. Now, for a Spiritual surprise. John said:

“¹⁰And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree [humans] which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹¹I indeed baptize [purify] you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me [Christ] is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear [why?]: he [here's why] shall baptize [purify] you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:...” (Matthew 3:10-11).

Why is Jesus greater than John? John can only prepare The Way, and he only baptizes (purifies) repented people with water. But Christ not only baptizes with water, but can and will SAVE EVERYONE. He has the additional advantage of The Power of Fire – (explained elsewhere).

BAPTISM BY WATER AND FIRE

Those not baptized (purified) by water will be baptized or purified by fire

(The Lake of Fire). The Lake of Fire is not intended to destroy people, but rather to cleanse and purify them by The Fire. They will emerge from this Fire.

What must be purified? It is not just the tree, but, also, the root. The tree is the body that bares the fruit. The root actually gives Life (“pneuma” – Spirit) to the tree. To have good fruit, one must have a clean heart or root.

When you repent, what dies in the water baptism besides your sins (Acts 2:38)? It is the self. What is repentance? In Strong’s #3340 and #3341, the Greek words “mentanoeo” and “metanoia” means “to think differently” or “reversal of one’s mind.” This is a core replacement taking place.

Repentance has nothing to do with the body or flesh, but only with your “pneuma” or “how you think.” It involves the very motivation and desire of your heart by means of a change of thinking. Your carnal thoughts or pneuma, only seem to follow the lust of the flesh or survival of the fittest (sarx). You need to get to the root, to your heart/Spirit to think like Christ (Philippians 2:5), and then God will be “all and in all.” How does this happen?

Once you repent by a change to God’s mind, and are baptized by putting your carnal heart to death, then you are purified or forgiven of your sins. So, Jesus must Save you (Romans 8:15-17). It has to be a total commitment. How is this done?

Paul said that if you are led by God’s Holy Spirit with “Christ in you”

(Colossians 1:27), then you will be a Son of God. Why? Because Christ can be in you by God's Comforter – His Holy Spirit (John 14:16-18).

How does God's Holy Spirit comfort you? His Spirit leads your "Spirit," your converted mind or "pneuma," into all truth. Your heart, which is now pure, can receive The Truth of God's Spirit which sets you FREE (John 17:17).

Then Romans 8:16 states, "**The Spirit [God's] itself beareth witness with our spirit [pneuma in man], that we are the children of God:**" Verse 17 reveals that you are God's children and heirs with Christ. You pass from death to Life. There is no second death (Lake of Fire) possible.

The death of your physical body can happen even multiple times like Lazarus, but in Christ, you are only asleep. What dies once? It is your carnal mind and heart that dies, and once that happens, Jesus Saves you by being your Redeemer.

GOD'S REST

"There remaineth therefore a rest [Sabbatismos: Entering the real Rest] to the people of God" (Hebrews 4:9). This rest is not Sabbaton, which is observing the 7th day, and only a shadow.

Paul said, "**For he that is entered into his rest [remember God's real Rest and not The Sabbath Day, which is merely a shadow or type of things to come], he also hath ceased from his own works [human effort]" (verse 10). How? It is by listening to God's Holy Spirit this very day, and**

for as long as God's Spirit is available to you.

In Ephesians 1:13-14, Paul said that when you repent and receive God's Holy Spirit, you are "sealed." This is very much like earnest money, or a down payment on your Inheritance. You are already sealed (passed from death to Life) to enter into God's real Rest or The Kingdom of God. Because of this, you can prove Biblically who will be in God's Kingdom.

THE FIVE REWARDS

I Corinthians 15 points out the order or sequence of how God, in Christ, SAVES EVERYONE. God is now in the process of Saving the entire world (I John 4:14).

This Biblical process shows how everyone must repent or confess their sins before Christ, either by baptism (purification) of water, or a baptism (purification) of fire. What must die? It is not merely the body of flesh, but the carnal minded heart that must die. This is The Spirit "in man" or "pneuma."

Now you will discover the facts about the orderly process of Salvation. There is a different reward for each Repented "group."

CHRIST – THE FIRSTBORN

The discussion in I Corinthian 15 concerns whether or not there will be any Last Day Resurrection. Paul declares that if Christ died and was not resurrected, then Christians, of all men, are most miserable.

This is because these individuals suffer more than people who seek to be comfortable during their life span. Also, it applies to Christians who stay dead for an extended period of time (I Corinthians 15:18-19).

Jesus Christ was the first to be Resurrected by God, to be in God's Kingdom. So, in God's order, Christ was Resurrected first, because He was The Firstborn. Consequently, He will be King of Kings and Lord of Lords over all of God's creation (verse 20).

He is to be The Savior of The World, and your Judge who sits on God's right hand sharing all that God is in His Being or "all and in all."

JESUS, THE CHRIST, GOD'S FIRSTBORN!

God's Kingdom involves a Royal Marriage with a Groom and a Bride. Read Matthew 22:1-14. God is preparing a Marriage Feast for His Son. He sends out His servants (Prophets) to announce The Wedding Feast. They are killed, and The King becomes angry, so He sends out invitations to all The World (The Gentiles).

This is a parable that compares with the fact that Israel rejected Jesus when He came as The Groom (John 3:29). Israel lost their "chosen" status, and became last in line for Salvation instead of being first. God then sends the invitations to The Gentiles. Notice that many are called but few are chosen (Matthew 22:14). Who is The Bride (virgins) to be called?

The Called Ones are "The Ecclesia" or The Church (Ephesians 5:23, 32). The Church is His Body. But out of those called, half are wise virgins and

the other half are unwise (Matthew 25:1-13). Read the entire account for a clearer understanding.

When Jesus returns at His Second Coming (Greek “parasousia”), He rejects the unwise virgins. Why is this? It is because they did not keep growing Spiritually in God’s Holy Spirit. They ran out of oil for their lamps, while watching for their husband to appear. Jesus will not marry any virgin who doesn’t love (agapé) Him as much as He loves her and for whom He gave His Life for His Bride – The Church.

A SPIRITUALLY GROWING CHRISTIAN

A virgin, to be accepted by Jesus, must love Him. Notice that you can be a virgin, clean, undefiled, and still not be selected by Christ. Going to church often, praying, fasting, and giving money doesn’t qualify a person to be a virgin. You can even give your body to be burned, but if you do not have love (agapé), you will not be chosen (I Corinthians 13:3). The wise virgin must be Perfect like God, your Father (Matthew 5:48). This is a tall order to fill. Now look at the characteristics you must possess:

1. You must Believe / Love His Son, Jesus.
2. You must Love God with all your heart, mind and being, to the extent of giving up your own whole life.
3. You must Love your neighbor as yourself and then, go further in Loving your enemies.

4. You must not judge or accuse others of wrong doing, which includes your enemies.
5. You must give to the needy.

Matthew 5, 6, and 7 show the perfection to which you must attain, in order to be like your Father and Christ. Nothing else counts – even the keeping of all the legal requirements of The Letter of The Law.

Christ said, “**By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another” (John 13:35). Nothing else matters. To be chosen as a Bride for Christ, you must be a Saint – which is to be willing to give up all or everything for Christ (Ephesians 1:1).**

Only a continually growing Christian can receive the reward of being Christ's Bride. However, Christ said only a few would be Saved. I Corinthians 15:23 shows how each person receives Salvation. Christ, who is first, then The Bride follows afterward at the second coming of Jesus.

THE BRIDE, SECOND TO BE SAVED!

Then comes the thousand-year reign (The Millennium) of Christ and His Bride. Carefully read all of Romans 11 where Jesus Saves all of Israel – not just The Jews. He saves the entire Twelve Tribes of Israel.

When does Christ Save Israel? Romans 11:25 states that when all The Gentiles have been called – before Israel. Israel ends up being the last to be Saved (verse 26). This is Christ's second coming as King of Kings

when He takes The Throne of David over Israel and The Whole World (Revelation 20:4-6).

This is when a New Temple is built, which is a courthouse for Israel and the world to receive mercy from Christ, The Judge – The King. The Temple reinstates The Torah or The Letter of The Law with its “Works” (Sacrifices, Holy Days, Sabbath, etc.) for the entire world. Why? This will be a first stepping-stone to bringing the unconverted to Christ, The Messiah, so they too, can repent and be healed. Once all Israel is Saved at The Last Day or Judgment, what will be their reward?

“...Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power” (I Corinthians 15:24).

This is the time when Jesus delivers up The Kingdom of God to God, The Father. This is the fantastic conclusion to the story of mankind. It is beyond the imagination of most people who attend church today. Now, it would be good to know what is the reward for Jesus, The Bride and Israel?

PARADISE

When New Jerusalem descends from heaven to the new earth, you will see a city that is adorned as a Bride for her Husband (Christ). This Kingdom will be God’s Rest (Sabbatismos). The Apostles form The Foundation, while The Wall is The Church (Bride). The Pearly Gates, which are not

Peter's, but The Twelve Tribes of Israel. Read all of Revelation 21 carefully.

This is God's Rest or Jubilee Year (50 years) when everyone receives Liberty by means of a Release (This particular part is explained fully in the book: **God's Puzzle Solved**). There will be no fears, no sorrows, no stress, no crying, no pain, and no death (Revelation 21:4). This truly is a Sabbath Rest – with everyone living in a state of Liberty and totally Free.

The following are the only ones living in New Jerusalem:

- 1. God, The Father (Revelation 21:3)**
- 2. Christ, The Groom (Revelation 21:22)**
- 3. Christ's Bride (Revelation 21:2, 7, 14)**
- 4. Israel – God's Witness (Revelation 21:2)**

When Jesus went to Heaven to be with His Father, He went to build a place for you in New Jerusalem (John 14:1-2).

Revelation 21:27 explains how only those who are written in The Lamb's Book of Life (The Marriage Registry) can enter New Jerusalem. At this time, only God, The Father, Jesus, The Husband, The Chosen Bride, and Israel live in this City.

Who is left out? Read Revelation 21:24. There are those nations who are Saved and are contained within The Book of Life, however, they do not

live in The City. They are Saved and can enter The City to bring their Glory to it, but live outside of The City. What is this Glory of The Saved Nations? The Greek word for “glory” is “doxa” meaning “all of God’s Goodness.” In God’s Kingdom, Spiritual growth continues. But, you need to know who these Saved nations are.

NEW JERUSALEM

Since the nations can come into New Jerusalem, they are The Guests. They do not live there, but are The Invited Guests to The Wedding Feast. How long does this Wedding Feast last? It lasts FOREVER. It is The Jubilee to always be jubilant and free forever. These people all continue to grow in God’s Glory of being “all and in all” with God. Who is in The Book of Life, otherwise known as The Marriage Registry? The following gives you the answer:

- 1. God (The Father)**
- 2. Jesus (Firstborn Son – The Groom)**
- 3. Bride (Saints Chosen from The Church – The Wise Virgins)**
- 4. Israel (Witnesses for The Wedding)**
- 5. Guests (Unwise virgins – Bridesmaids and The Guests)**

Who is left out? Those who were defiled, who worked abominations, and/or were liars. They cannot enter The City. Besides, they are not in

The Marriage Registry of The Lamb (Revelation 21:27). Only those who keep God's Ten Commandments Spiritually, in their hearts, can enter The City (Revelation 22:14). The following are excluded:

“For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie” (Revelation 22:15).

None of these people can enter New Jerusalem. That would be a defilement of the first order. Jesus foretold the circumstances about these sinful people in The Sermon on The Mount, saying:

“Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments [The Ten], and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven” (Matthew 5:19).

Both groups are in The Kingdom. But those who do not keep The Ten Commandments Spiritually are not allowed into The City and have the least reward in God's Kingdom. Who are these people and what happens to them? (Chapter 16 answers this point.)

But for now, rejoice in the fact that all of humanity will be Saved because God and Christ will lose no one. That is your hope and truly a joyous fact to fully comprehend.

CHAPTER 20

A SPIRITUAL RESURRECTION ONLY?

The Apostle Paul gives important details about the forthcoming Resurrection from the dead. His main point of emphasis revolves around a particular step-by-step sequence of events. In describing how these events unfold, Paul used the words: “...every man in his own order...” (I Corinthians 15:23). Does this include those people who are cast into The Lake of Fire? The answer is “Yes.” They will be Saved – eventually. But how will this occur? For one thing, they will be Resurrected in their own order or sequence. Very few people seem to understand the full extent of God’s mercy. What does The Bible say?

The vital text of I Corinthians 15:23 concentrates upon a special Resurrection sequence. The key words “...every man in his own order...” are extremely important, because these words establish the primary basis for discerning the situation facing those people who were

cast into The Lake of Fire. This prime text brings you to the final group of people who are Saved by means of a Resurrection.

Paul's statement about, "**...as in Adam all die ...**," (verse 22) clearly applies to all of Adam and Eve's posterity. The entire human race is included in this vital text. But there is more. All of humanity is, also, included in the remainder of that same text which says, "**...as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive**" (verse 22). Pay special attention to those key words, "**...even so in Christ shall all be made alive**." That means everyone.

BABES IN CHRIST

People who study their Bibles may be inclined to look into the subject of The Promised Future Life. In most cases, they have not been told other more important details. Vital evidence is usually missing from the commonly given explanations or not adequately explained by various Bible teachers. Many Bible students have not been completely satisfied with this type of subject under investigation. The commonly accepted notions about Heaven and Hell dominate.

Consider Paul's Epistle to The Corinthians. This letter was written to The Church of God in Corinth. These new Christians were short on critical knowledge – just as many people are today.

What kind of Church was it? What did these people understand? What did they fail to learn? You need to know the answers to these questions,

because your own understanding depends upon what these people were told by this Apostle over 1900 years ago.

In I Corinthians 3:1, The Apostle Paul described the general level of Spirituality of The Church. He explained how The Corinthian Church was still carnal, and the brethren were like babes in Christ. They had not fully repented. Neither had they grown in truth and understanding.

These new Christians still had viewpoints in their minds (pneuma) like babes who were just barely beginning to understand various aspects of The Truth. So, therefore, Paul explained how this Epistle was being written from the point of view that the readers were still babes in Christ.

Then Paul admonished these brethren for being so limited in their thinking because they only accepted the teaching given by their favorite minister. This created a division in the group. It led to disputes and personality conflicts within The Church. All of this was identified as “carnal” activity. For a full perspective, please read all of I Corinthians 3.

To counter these misconceptions, Paul explained how every one of God’s ministers are truly God’s servants (verse 9). He showed how the only foundation any ministerial teacher has is what has already been laid by Jesus Christ (verse 11). If The Corinthians were to accept any other teaching as the foundation upon Christ, then that teaching would be tried and tested. How was this accomplished? Notice what Paul said:

“¹²Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; ¹³Every

man's work [teaching] **shall be made manifest: for the day** [what day?] **shall declare it, because it shall be revealed** [how?] **by fire; and the fire shall try** [not destroy] **every man's work** [teaching] **of what sort it is"**
(I Corinthians 3:12-13).

WHAT WORK SURVIVES?

How clear and easy this is to understand. Notice those questions in brackets within the quotation above. They were placed into the context to capture your attention at these critical points in Paul's exposition. Many people just read over these profound statements by Paul. Yet, those questions should draw necessary attention to aspects that everyone must seriously consider.

Remember, Paul said that he was speaking to babes in Christ who were newly repentant Christians. Paul explained the following:

"¹⁴If any man's work [teaching or belief] **abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. ¹⁵If any man's work shall be burned [Lake of Fire], he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire"** (verses 14-15).

This message is so plain. The reward and/or loss are clearly defined. But who has thought in these terms before? In other words, your false beliefs about faith will be burned – but your "pneuma" (mind) will be Saved.

Why is this? It is because the burned “Works” represent repentance, and the death of your carnal minds and hearts (pneuma). Remember, that “only once” are you appointed (reserved) to die. This was explained in an earlier chapter.

Paul pointed out how the babes in Christ never died fully (in their heart). Therefore, they need the fire to test them. Only then, and by this means, could they be Saved. The fire quickly burned up the wood, hay and stubble. These are the combustible elements of negativity that are resident in the natural person. The body and ashes become ashes under one’s feet. After “The Fire,” what remains is a repentant heart of gold, silver, and precious stones.

The Lake of Fire doesn’t destroy you, but only the body (soma), and the flesh (sarx). These two items are completely destroyed and are dead. Even the carnal mind and heart dies (pneuma), so there is nothing remaining alive of the “former” person. This amounts to total destruction and death. Then, it is God who gives you a new Spirit (pneuma) or heart. What is left from The Fire is a new mind and heart, while the false beliefs have all disappeared in The Fire.

At this point, God’s Holy Spirit can dwell in these people (verse 16). Remember, it is only the carnal babes in Christ who are destined to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. They will be the last ones to be Saved in Christ. So this group, which is the fifth (5th) under consideration, is the last group to be Saved.

Consequently, this group will have a baptism (purification) of fire by Christ, The Judge, who is no longer The Savior or Redeemer in this capacity. His role has changed for this Purpose.

TIME OF REPRODUCTION

The time frame concerning these “babes” in Christ is judiciously located in Galatians 4:19-27. Paul states that since these immature Christians are only children (Babes in Christ), in the rebirth, he wants them to fully mature (become adults) – with Christ having been formed in them.

These Galatians had received false teaching from The Jews who were saying: (1) they had to be circumcised, and (2) were required to keep The Letter (Legal Works) of The Law. Therefore, Paul had to explain The Two Covenants. It was not The Covenant which was a promise given to Abraham, but rather The Covenant that was given to Israel at Mt. Sinai after they had sinned.

Paul said The Old Covenant is an allegory (type or shadow), which was represented by Hagar and her child. She was the handmaiden of Abraham's wife, Sarah. This situation could be compared to The Letter of The Law, which was used as an effort to please God in the flesh. But in fact, it can never please God in the ultimate sense (Romans 8:8).

Paul explained how The New Covenant is from Jerusalem located in Heaven, which is not like the earthly Jerusalem, with its fleshy worship.

JERUSALEM ABOVE

Now be prepared for a fantastic Spiritual lesson. Galatians 4:26 states, **“But Jerusalem which is above is free [No Letter of The Law], which is the mother of us all.”** This Jerusalem comes down to earth in Revelation 21 and 22. It is everyone’s (the World’s) mother. Remember that Eve’s name meant Mother of All Living – not dying. Therefore, Eve was a type of The Church (Genesis 3:20).

The earthly mother (physical Jerusalem) produces more children than the heavenly Jerusalem (verse 27). Ultimately, the heavenly New Jerusalem breaks forth (has many babies) with more children than the desolate – which are Satan’s children who have been created by attempts of human reason and effort.

Reproduction by any method is okay with Satan, whether by means of illegitimacy, cloning, artificial insemination, or any other way, but not God’s way.

So, these babes in Christ who are thrown into The Lake of Fire – will come to Repentance – and the carnal-minded heart will die (pneuma). They will become babes in Christ who are eventually born again (John 3). All this will take place in proper sequence.

Read God’s indictment of Eve for having followed Satan’s instructions

(Genesis 3:15-16). From this point on, Eve was Adam’s property for purposes of sex and reproduction (Satan’s system). In this regard, Satan

will always consider God's natural system of reproduction as an enemy, and so women will have a reminder through (1) childbirth in pain and (2) a period of sorrow. Why is this?

PAINFUL BIRTH

The outcome is The Lake of Fire or painful birth. This is because of Satan's system will exist until they repent. Then, they will begin to follow God's will! Read this penalty about a painful birth in Genesis 3:16. This will ultimately save the babe in childbirth, which is a type of a new incorruptible babe in Christ.

Paul elaborates on this later in a Spiritual sense, when he declares, "...**she** [the woman] **shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety**" (I Timothy 2:15).

The book of Hebrews warns that God is a consuming fire, which is how God punishes (Hebrews 12:29). Paul warns Christians not to allow any root of bitterness to spring up in them, as they can become defiled by it. Bitterness makes your heart carnal, and loveless (verse 15). You need a loving heart to be like Christ.

Remember that your "pneuma" or carnal heart must die once. What does God do to carnal people? "**For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth** [whips] **every son whom he receiveth**" (Hebrews 12:6). The Lake of Fire is God's whipping board. It is, also, compared to the

situation where the stripes were laid upon Christ. He willingly accepted these stripes for you.

The prophecy by Isaiah will help to identify who God receives. When God brings forth children (birth), it always comes to completion (Isaiah 66:8-11). God never aborts. Abortion is a sin. Why is this? Isaiah 59:1-2 reveals that God can Save everyone, and it is only sin that separates you from God and Salvation.

FULL TERM BIRTH FOR EVERYONE?

God can and will Save everyone. Read God's promise. Isaiah 66:9 says, **“Shall I bring to birth [from conception], and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb?...”** God never aborts or miscarries his children. He always brings a fetus to birth.

Once God conceives (as Logos) He brings it to pass (II Peter 3:9). Still births, abortions, crib deaths, etc., are the result of generations of sin (Exodus 20:5). When those conceptions occur through sinful acts, if that person repents, then God promises to bring it to birth (this action by God will be proved later).

The Hebrew word meaning “birth” in Isaiah 66:9 is “shabar,” “to crush” or “destroy,” which is called “abort” and/or “abortion.” God will not abort anyone. God created you, and it is God's Will to Save everyone, no matter how long it may take (II Peter 3:9).

CORRUPTIBLE TO INCORRUPTIBLE

Many say that if God Saves everyone then where does The Bible prove a third resurrection? That is a good question. But God has already resurrected everyone in The White Throne Resurrection (Revelation 20:11-15). All who are not raised in The First Resurrection (The Bride at Christ's second coming) will be resurrected in The Second Resurrection, which is also called The Last Day (John 5:27-29; John 6:40). There is no need for a physical, third resurrection.

Some believe there is a 100-year period when everyone who didn't know Christ will receive their chance for Salvation. But this isn't necessary, because in Luke 12, Christ already answered this dilemma (it will be proved later).

This Resurrection of The Last Day (Great White Throne) is for people who are totally restored as humans. You will have your body (soma), flesh (sarx), and Spirit in man. Remember, that when one dies, this Spirit in man goes back to God who gave it originally (Ecclesiastes 12:7). "Pneuma" is God's life-giving energy that gives you rational, conscious thought. It is what makes you what you are.

The state of the dead deals with, "God's individual code for you." You will learn more about this code, or Spirit in man, by which process God allows you to exist as a personal being. There is no need for a third physical resurrection. You have either killed your carnal heart – or else you have not repented yet.

Christ said The Last Day (or White Throne Judgment) is when all nations are gathered together (Matthew 25:32-33). This judgment in the Greek, is “krisis” or “crisis.” Why is this? It is because it is a time of separation between The Sheep and The Goats.

This is according to their works, and whether or not various individuals are recorded in The Book of Life. This is not a Judgment of listening to all the sins you committed. Rather, it is a crisis of separation (The great gulf of death) between Sheep and Goats.

100-YEAR PERIOD?

There is “no” 100-year period for gaining a chance at Salvation, suggested by Isaiah 65:20. The judgment is merely a separation. Jesus separates The Sheep from The Goats, period (Matthew 25:33). The Sheep (Wedding guests) enter God’s Kingdom, while The Goats are thrown into The Lake of “age-lasting” Fire (Matthew 25:41). This explanation should be simple enough, and quite clear to your understanding.

But, what happens to those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire? How does it convert them? I Corinthians 15 is The Resurrection Chapter. This is where you see how everyone is Saved in Christ – according to their individual order. Remember, the five categories of this Salvation are:

1. Christ, The Firstborn.
2. The Bride, or chosen Saints from The Church. These are represented by The Five Wise Virgins.

3. The two witnesses for The Wedding Feast represent The Restored Lost Tribes of Israel and Judah, as one nation (Ezekiel 37:22).
4. The Guests are The Sheep, or The Five Remaining Unwise Virgins. They are the saved nations in The Kingdom (Revelation 21:24).

Note #1: Remember, the five unwise virgins are literal virgins. They are undefiled and clean – and can come to The Wedding Feast. They have The Wedding Garments (Brides' maids) and are unspotted. However, they were running out of God's Holy Spirit and were not a shining light on a hill for a witness of The Groom (Christ) when He came. They lost out on being The Bride, but were still virgins and undefiled. As they say, "Forever a bridesmaid, but never a bride." You could compare this with Cinderella, The Bride, and her sisters, who were virgins.

Note #2: That is why they must bring their glory to New Jerusalem (Greek – "doxa," "God's goodness") to Christ, which is their Spiritual growth. The waters from God's throne carrying the healing leaves from The Tree of Life, heals them. These are the ones who are like Job, who believe they must be an observer of "The Letter of The Law." But this was their own righteousness. They will be in God's Kingdom as The Guests or Bridesmaids who must continue to grow Spiritually

in The Holy Spirit. It cannot be by means of their own righteousness (Revelation 21:24). However, the last Saved group, the unconverted, will be there also.

5. The unconverted will receive stripes from God by The Fire. You can Biblically prove the process of their Salvation, which is not a physical third resurrection, but rather a Spiritual third harvest. This is The Great Fall Harvest when billions are saved.

THE WICKED ARE SAVED

Those thrown into The Lake of Fire have already been defined as “the babes” in Christ. They must endure this trial, or else they cannot be Saved. How does God bring them to repentance? These Babes in Christ must break forth, or have a painful birth as Eve was promised.

Continuing with “the order” of Salvation in I Corinthians 15, you finally come to the end of death. In verse 24, Paul explained how the end comes when Christ gives total control of The Kingdom back to His Father. Paul states that until all enemies of God are defeated, Jesus must continue to reign (I Corinthians 15:25).

Then Paul beautifully reveals how the last enemy is Death itself, which must be destroyed. He says, “**The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death**” (I Corinthians 15:26). In the light of this text, it would be foolish to say something like: “death is destroyed – except for all the dead people

lying around.” That would be absurd. Besides, it is a contradiction of terms. The only way that text could be true is if all of the dead people were given Life. On this basis, Salvation is Universal.

Furthermore, according to this Scripture if anyone is dead, then Christ cannot turn over The Kingdom of God to The Father (I Corinthians 15:24). Jesus must reign until Death is gone! If, as some believe, this doesn't include those in The Lake of Fire who are “destroyed,” then this scripture cannot be true. This is because verse 54 states, “...**Death is swallowed up in victory.**”

The Greek word for “victory” is, “nikos” meaning “a conquest,” or “doing away with it.” That is the full intent of the word “victory.” The word “swallow,” in the Greek is, “katapino,” meaning “to drown” or “completely gulp down,” or “to be gone” or “totally removed.” This victory carries the complete meaning for “nothing to be left.” Death can no longer exist. No one can be dead, or else there is no victory over death. This is very plain.

It may be the reason why some erroneously believe that those in The Lake of Fire will burn forever. But, that thinking is not Biblically true. These Bible statements mean what they say. All the dead are no longer dead. Read how that happens in Isaiah 45:21-25.

You have already seen proof of how there are three places in The Bible validating each and every person will bow their knees to Christ and Repent. The prophecy reveals that even the incensed (angry toward God),

and the wicked, will bow their knees and confess. Who are these individuals? It applies to every race and tongue (the whole world). Twice Paul states that all will repent (Romans 14:7-11, Philippians 2:10-11). Yes, all will repent, but how?

A SPIRITUAL RESURRECTION

Paul said that all people are sown or created a natural body; and that all are raised a Spiritual Body (I Corinthians 15:44). That seems quite clear. In other words, those Saved were human – and they died (soma, sarx). This includes their body and fleshly desire. Their Spirit (pneuma) went back to God at the point of death (Ecclesiastes 12:7). What dies? This text of Ecclesiastes 12:7 focuses on the dust (body and flesh) that shall die and become part of the earth (grave) once again while The Spirit goes back to God.

But, not everyone is resurrected from the grave or hades (Hell). I Corinthians 15:51 states that not everyone goes back to the grave, and dies physically. Remember, there are Christians who are “dead,” but they are only asleep. However, Paul said that everyone (Christians) will not sleep or die. Who would this be? Verse 52 explains that in a moment, at The Last Trump, the dead Christians will rise from the grave and be composed of Spirit or no longer human.

Those who are alive at The Last Trump will automatically have a Spiritual Resurrection without the death of the body. The body is instantly changed

to a Spirit body. It is completely a Spiritual Resurrection. When does this happen? When is The Last Trump?

In I Thessalonians 4:13-18, Paul explained how The Last (Seventh) Trump takes place when Jesus returns the second time to the earth to rule with His Bride (Saints in The Church). This is just before The Millennium begins. Paul gives this as a Biblical example of a Spiritual Resurrection, which doesn't require death of the body. Another physical Resurrection of those in The Lake of Fire is not necessary. No further judgment is required. They paid the last farthing or penalty for their crimes.

Paul defines this Spiritual Resurrection (Harvest):

“For this corruptible [body and flesh] must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality”
(I Corinthians 15:53).

This is an instantaneous change for these people. It is just like those who are alive at Christ's second coming. Paul continues with the revealed order of those who are Saved, by stating the following:

“So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality...” (verse 54).

This is an instant body-to-Spirit process. In the “twinkling of an eye” (verse 52) a change to a Spiritual body occurs. This mortal (dying) body

puts on immortality (Eternal Body) at that time, and death is swallowed up in victory.

“...then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory” (verse 54).

When is this? It is not The First Resurrection in verse 52, but when Christ puts down the last enemy – Death. No one is dead any longer. Now Paul’s glorious summation of this entire account:

“⁵⁵O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law” (verses 55-56).

Everyone confesses and repents. When they are converted, they are dead to The Law (Romans 7:6). Once you are dead (Repented – death of carnal heart), The Law has no hold on you, so therefore, you have no sin.

THIRD RESURRECTION – A HARVEST

This can be called the third or Spiritual Resurrection, in The Lake of Fire. It concerns those who repent, and become the babes in Christ in God’s Kingdom. Notice, they are not allowed into New Jerusalem until they grow Spiritually by keeping God’s Commandments in their hearts.

New Jerusalem is where righteousness dwells, but these babes in Christ are not allowed to enter. They are “the least” in God’s Kingdom because

they did not believe in God's Commandments. Read Revelation 22:14-15. Those who remain outside the city are the wicked and unbelievers.

Everyone who has existed, including the angels (Satan and demons) will eventually be Saved. Everyone existing now, and all those who will exist in the future will, also, be included. This is because they will repent and confess their sins (Philippians 2:9-11). Everyone confesses and repents. These will be: (1) those in heaven (angels), (2) those things in the earth (humans who are alive), and (3) those under the earth (the dead in their graves). Philippians 2:10-11 discloses this information.

This means that everyone is Saved – therefore, fulfilling the text that declares, God is “all and in all.” This final Spiritual Resurrection or Harvest affects those confessing, and those who are still in The Lake of Fire. This is a Spiritual Resurrection. When they confess before Christ and God, The Father, then they are the final group, in sequence, which is Salvation being given to every person. But, they will also be “the babes” in Christ who are living in God's Kingdom. This is New Jerusalem, breaking forth, as The Universal Mother, The Church, having billions of children. Christ, The Husband and His Bride, The Church, producing far more children than the desolate (Galatians 4:19-27).

CHAPTER 21

GOD – ALL IN ALL

When Christ puts down the last enemy called DEATH, which is the second death – or the end of death, itself. Christ, then, will turn over all authority back to God, The Father, so that, “...God may be all in all” (I Corinthians 15:28, Revelation 20:14). Everything and everyone in Heaven and on earth will be of God, which means “...all in all...” This is how it was at the beginning. You now will observe how this condition describes how it will all conclude.

Genesis 1:1 declares God created Heaven and earth. This tends to be perceived as “the beginning.” However, before God created these massive material systems of galaxies, there was only God – and nothing else. God truly was “all and in all.” Everything that was, is, or will be was in God.

Psalms 139:17 states that David knew how precious God’s Thoughts or Logos were concerning humanity, and how great was the sum of them. David was thinking in terms of “totality.” In the context of comparing God’s Thoughts with all of these created material systems, where do you think you, yourself stand?

The answer is, in God's Thoughts you are so precious that you are right at the sum – or the top of God's Thoughts. This is what The Book of Hebrews conveys about God's Mind – and His perspective about you.

Ephesians 1:5 reveals that God predestinated or foreknew all the wonderful things about The Truth of “everyone” becoming God's Sons. God's Thoughts (“logos”) are so wonderful. These thoughts cannot be numbered (Psalms 40:5). Verses 6-8 reveal how God's Thoughts come to pass by means of The Sacrifice of His Son, Jesus. What a Sacrifice this great King of The Universe has made. No one understands how loving and good to mankind He is.

Since God aborts no one, and He clearly Saves everyone – then all will be Saved. Everything created, including the angels and all humanity, was actually contained within God's Thoughts (“logos”). Everyone and everything comes from God by The Power of God's Holy Spirit, which is His Glory or Total Goodness.

God is “all and in all.” Everything comes from Him. The Alpha and The Omega, the beginning and the ending, all come from God Almighty, through His Son, Jesus.

CHRIST CREATED ALL THINGS

In the order of The Resurrection, Jesus was The First to be raised from the dead. In Ephesians 3:9, Paul said that all things were created by Christ. How was this? In John 1:14, The Word (“Logos” – God's Thoughts)

was made flesh and dwelt on this earth. How?

Beholding His Glory, which was also God's Glory, which was contained within the realm of The Only Begotten of The Father. John reveals Christ as The One who became The Word of God ("Logos") by being Begotten in God's Glory (John 2 explains this in detail).

Since Christ, at His physical birth, became The Logos, or God's Word, and God's Word created everything. Christ, therefore, created everything. How simple.

In the Greek language, The Word which was begotten of God's Glory is "monogenes." It means the "beginning one" – or "the first one to be begotten in God's Glory." Before Christ was human, He was predestined or foreknown in God's Thoughts ("Logos") by The Power of God's Holy Spirit, which is God's Glory.

The Greek word for "only begotten" is "monogenes" and the English word "genesis" or "the beginning" is derived from it. The scientific word for "genes," has been derived from this same root word. Just as your genes come from your father, so were God's genes in Jesus. The genes come from His Father by The Power of God's Holy Spirit.

You began by coming from your father's genes, just as Christ's genes came from His Father. How simple is this perspective. In God's Glory, which is all of God's goodness or riches, Christ was The Firstborn.

From God's Thoughts or God's Glory, The Firstborn known as The

Christ, created all things. This was done by means of God working through Him. So, Christ was with God (in His Thoughts and through His Power) before God created anything else through His Son. And, since Christ at His physical Birth became God's Word (Logos), God's Word created everything. Jesus, therefore, created, all things. Christ was the very Word of God.

From the state "of being in Christ," The Bride, The Two Witnesses (Israel and Judah), The Guests, and then, finally, The Babes in Christ (who repent in The Lake of Fire) – these are all predestined to be within God's Kingdom. You need to recognize that God will, definitely, Save all the individuals who have ever lived.

The question remaining is, "How do those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire, come to A State of Repentance?" This is absolutely essential for you to know so that Universal Salvation will take place. After all, this is what The Scriptures teach.

Therefore, you must ask: "How does Christ decide who goes into The Fire?" These are questions that cause one to wonder what it is that brings these people to Repentance. And, what happens to them in The Kingdom of God? That situation needs to be addressed in order to facilitate "a full Christian understanding" of these vital topics.

WHO GOES INTO HELL?

In The Bible, there are three types of hell. The three Greek words for hell

are: “hades,” “tartaroo,” and “Gehenna.” The Greek meaning for each is different. “Hell” in the Greek is “hades,” and in The Hebrew it is “sheol.”

The first meaning of hell is “the grave.” Farmers of old were accustomed to burying their potatoes in “hell” for the winter. Obviously, they mean “in the ground,” and not in a burning subterranean cavern. But this example illustrates a fairly recent understanding of what is meant by the term “hell.”

The second meaning for “hell” is “tartaroo” – which is a “place of restraint for Satan and his demons.” This is when these nefarious ones are placed in “tartaroo” for The Millennium. This is the time period when Satan is no longer permitted to deceive the nations. This will be after Christ returns to rule the earth.

The third name for “hell” is “gehenna,” which is “a burning garbage dump.” It is located just outside The City of Jerusalem in The Valley of Gehenna (called “hell”). This is where the city burned its refuse.

In Biblical times, the bodies of the worst criminals were merely thrown onto the garbage heap in Gehenna to allow decomposition. When Christ returns, this place is where the beast and false prophet are cast at the start of The Millennium. However, The Lake of Fire is different.

LAKE OF FIRE

Isaiah 30:33 prophesies that in “Tophet” (The Refuse Dump – Gehenna), Judah also offered their young babies as human Sacrifices. At that time,

there was the idea that God would breathe upon this site, and ignite The Lake of Fire. After all, God is a consuming Fire, and the entire earth and Heaven will eventually be consumed. So, their superstition was logical in that sense.

All of these things point to the time when The Lake of Fire will be ignited as a physical place on this earth for fulfilling this Purpose. This will be the time when God descends from Heaven on The Last Great Day, and all that is corruptible in Heaven and earth will be burned (II Peter 3:7).

THE DEVIL

Who is thrown into The Lake of Fire and tormented? First, Satan, the devil is thrown into this Lake of Fire. He will be tormented day and night unto the ages of the ages (Revelation 20:10).

At the time of The White Throne Judgment, God will separate “The Sheep” from “The Goats.” Those who are The Sheep will inherit God's Kingdom. Those who are The Goats have another destiny awaiting them. In Revelation (21:8):

“But the fearful [those who wouldn't follow Christ], and unbelieving [atheists and agnostics], and the abominable, and murders, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone [Divine Fire –

Isaiah 30:33]: **which is the second death**” (Revelation 21:8).

There is one more group to be addressed. These are the ones who are considered to be unbelievers. Jesus warned in Luke 12:46-49 that those who are not growing Spiritually until Christ returns, will be regarded on Judgment Day as any other unbeliever (verse 46). So those who are not continually “FAITHFULLY GROWING SPIRITUALLY” until Jesus returns will be evaluated as not believing God or His Son. They will be just as atheists.

What happens to these “weak Christians?” Christ will appoint them to the same penalty as unbelievers (verse 46). How clear and simple this is. They will, also, be thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelations 21:8).

Those thrown into this Fire will be beaten with stripes, just as Christ had received. The stripes, in man, depict the penalty for disobedience. Consequently, Christ’s stripes heal all Christians. In short, Christ went into The Fire for you.

PURPOSE FOR STRIPES

How long will those individuals, who are thrown into The Fire, remain there? First of all, there is no identifiable 100-year period for those who didn’t know Christianity at this time. Jesus said:

“And that servant, which knew his lord’s will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will,

shall be beaten with many stripes" (Luke 12:47).

Those who knew better, will be placed into The Lake of Fire for a very long time. Now examine the following contrasting instruction:

"But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more" (Luke 12: 48).

Babies who died at birth must now be considered, also. Take into account those who were agnostics or atheists. Do not overlook those who never heard of God, or Christ. All these individuals would still receive stripes – BUT ONLY A FEW.

There is no 100-year period. There are those individuals, today, who believe the notion that the 100 years of Life prophesied in Isaiah 65 is really The Last Day of Judgment – which in reality refers to The Millennium. That is not the case. The stripes are for The Christians who refused to grow – and who get the same punishment as the unbelievers or the atheists, etc. (verse 46). So disregard the 100-year period as having any application in this sense.

Unbelievers go into The Lake of Fire. Therefore, the stripes are the amount of time these people remain in torment in The Lake of Fire. So it could be said that: "Stripes = the amount of time served" or "penalty paid." What could be a better slogan for this occasion?

Then consider that Jesus plainly stated how the stripes were to apply to those individuals who are placed into The Lake of Fire (Luke 12:49). **“I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled?”** These are fearful words. Therefore, you should ask: “How long does one remain in The Lake of Fire?”

AGREE WITH YOUR ADVERSARY

Jesus said, **“Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge...”** (Matthew 5:25). Once you are placed on trial and set to be judged – it is, then, too late. Realize that if you are found guilty, then you will not be released from prison until you have paid the uttermost farthing. In the Greek language, “uttermost” implies “The White Throne Judgment” or “The Last Day.”

Christ is telling each individual to Repent. Christ wants you to “make amends now.” You must settle out of court. This is the only way to settle your debt of sins and be forgiven. Jesus claimed that if your eye offends you, then pluck it out (Matthew 5:29). It is better for you to lose your eye than for your entire body (soma) to be thrown into hell (Gehenna).

Finally, Jesus warns that your hand (implying what you do by human effort) should stop its action, or else your whole body will go into hell (Matthew 5:30). The sooner a person repents (puts the carnal mind [heart] to death), the sooner the torment of The Fire will end.

WHAT IS THE TORMENT?

The True Gospel teaching will be tested in The Fire. It doesn't burn (I Corinthians 3). False teaching is compared to the wood, hay, and stubble. Since your bodies (soma) and flesh (sarx) cause the human tendency (weakness) to sin, you will burn very rapidly – just like wood, hay, or stubble. However, your body does not burn forever in The Lake of Fire. In fact, your body will burn up – to become ashes “under the feet” VERY QUICKLY. Notice what The Prophet Malachi said:

“¹...all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts....³ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts” (Malachi 4:1, 3).

Daniel 3:24-25 is the story about Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who were thrown into the fiery furnace of Nebuchadnezzar. Yet, you have learned that nothing actually burned. Their lives were spared. Why was this?

It was because they did not need to repent of any false teaching. They had complete Faith and Trust in God (Daniel 3:16-17). They were completely tested in The Fire, and were found to be like “refined gold.” So nothing burned. They had complete faith in their Father.

When those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire become like refined gold (completely Repentant), and their carnal hearts die along with their bodies and flesh – then they are changed in “a twinkling of an eye” at The Time of The Resurrection. They have passed “the great gulf” (death), and will be given new Spirit bodies – just like new-born babes in Christ.

What causes “the stripes” which are compared to “torment?” There are three words in the Greek language for “torment.” Each has a different meaning:

1. #2558 “kakoucheo.” This word means, “to suffer ill” or “to be mistreated.” This does not describe the torment in The Lake of Fire because those who are thrown into it, actually deserve it.
2. #3600 “odunao.” Implies “to cause pain” or “suffer.” This is not torment in The Lake of Fire, but most believe this is what torment in hell (Lake of Fire) is like. Soon, you will read about the identity of the real torment in The Lake of Fire.
3. #931 “basanos.” This word defines “the torment received in The Lake of Fire” or “hell.” This word means a “touchstone,” which is a black siliceous stone used to test or purify. When applied to gold or silver, it is the color of the streak produced, by rubbing it with either metal. Hence, the word “torment” would apply here because of this strong rubbing force. In other words, the unrepentant are finally forced to tell The Truth or Repent (a change of mind).

THIS FIRE IS NOT TO DESTROY

The torture in The Lake of Fire is not to destroy, but to educate or discipline wayward individuals to the point of Repentance. It could be compared to the parent who spansks the child – until that child finally admits The Truth. Paul clearly states The Purpose for The Lake of Fire in Hebrews. Paul declares:

“For they [your human fathers] verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness”
(Hebrews 12:10).

God determines that the wicked will be thrown into The Lake of Fire (hell) for their own good. This will bring them to the point of becoming Holy – to be as God is Holy. After they repent, they will become the newborn babes in Christ (God's Kingdom).

All this applies to The Third Harvest, which is a Spiritual Resurrection. This is because the body (soma), the flesh (sarx), and the carnal heart (pneuma) have died. Nothing remains except God who will be Spiritually Resurrecting them as Spiritual Babes in Christ.

LAZARUS AND THE RICH MAN

The story about Lazarus and the rich man is greatly misunderstood. It is found in Luke 16. Lazarus was the poor man who was in Abraham's bosom. But who is the rich man who is burning in hell?

Most people misread the account because some think the word “hell” in Luke 16:23 is “The Lake of Fire” or “Gehenna” (hell). Not so! The word “hell” in this verse is “hades,” or “the grave.”

In this case, the rich man is just being resurrected from the grave (Second Resurrection). But, notice, as he is looking up, he feels the burning heat from God’s return to the earth as it burns.

This account reveals the rich man’s Repentance. But he must still remain in The Lake of Fire until he pays “the last farthing” – and nothing is left of his carnal heart. This occurs until only Truth (full Repentance) remains. The rich man will become as Refined Gold.

Once the rich man receives his “full stripes” (which he deserves), he passes the “great gulf,” and is Spiritually Resurrected from corruptible to Incorruptible (I Corinthians 15:50-54). Amazingly, this is what Jesus said must happen to the rich man who kept all of God’s Commandments in “The Letter” – but had a “wrongly motivated heart.” Jesus said that a rich man can hardly enter into God’s Kingdom. It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to get into God’s Kingdom. Read Matthew 19:23-26 carefully. Christ answered by saying: “**With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible**” (Matthew 19:26). There it is. This is absolute Biblical proof. This rich man who kept the legal Works of The Commandments (but not in his heart), is Saved by being thrown into The Lake of Fire. This is God’s way of Saving the rich man. That is the real Biblical lesson of Lazarus and the rich man.

There is another Biblical account of Christians who must be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Christ's warning to the Christians who are not growing Spiritually, is how they receive the same penalty as the unbelievers (atheists) – which is The Lake of Fire (the many stripes written in Luke 12).

Jesus warns one of His Christian Churches that they need to go into The Lake of Fire in order to become zealous growing Christians. Revelation 3:15-20 relates to one of The Seven Churches, which are, indeed, of Christ, but they were lukewarm and not really growing Spiritually.

THE LAODICEAN CHURCH

This section of text deals with those individuals in Christ's Body (Church) who were in The City of Laodicea. What was their problem? **“I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot:...”** (verse 15). He preferred them to be either cold or hot. If they were cold, then it is like an atheist or agnostic. They would not need to receive many stripes in hell (Gehenna). Or, if they were very zealous, they would not go into hell at all.

Why are they lukewarm? It is because they didn't think they needed to grow in new Truth any longer. This is apparent because they believed they already had The Truth. Once they believe they already possess “all The Truth,” they are automatically placed in serious trouble.

Paul plainly states that humans can only know “in part.” There is not one

person, group, or denomination who has all The Truth – but only God and Christ have The Whole Truth (I Corinthians 13:9-10).

THE TEN TALENTS

The parable of The Ten Talents in Matthew 25:14-30 is about the individual who buried his one talent (he knew Christ and The Law). This was because he was afraid to keep growing into New Truth (he thought he already had all he needed) or was afraid to give up what he thought. He feared God, and knew he was a hard man. But God removed even that Truth (one Talent). He became an unbeliever in hell. Therefore, he went into The Lake of Fire. Please read through this entire account.

Christians grow in degrees – from The Letter of The Law to The Spirit of The Law and beyond. They continue to grow – up to the state to where they will have two, five, and even ten talents. This is why The Laodicean Church was instructed in the following by Christ:

“I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame [fear to grow] of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes [see the real Truth] with eyesalve; that thou mayest see”
(Revelation 3:18).

The message continues with these words: “**As many as I [Christ] love** [the rich man kept The Letter of The Law], **I rebuke and chasten** [stripes in

hell]: **be zealous therefore, and repent**" (verse 19).

Jesus, Himself, states that you will go into hell (Fire), and in that process, you must repent to be Saved. How much clearer can this be? So, The Purpose of The Lake of Fire is to bring people to Repentance, and then to finally Save them. In this context, you must ask, "What is it that burns the longest to become refined gold" (verse 19)?

FALLEN SPIRITS

In Matthew 8:28-33, read the account about Christ crossing The Sea of Galilee, and came across a man possessed with many demons. The demons told Jesus that they knew He was The Son of God. But they, also, wanted to know why He came before their designated "time of judgment" or "their torment" (basanos).

These were demons, or fallen angels operating from within Satan's dominion. They knew that they would be thrown into The Lake of Fire and tormented. But they wanted to know why Jesus had come "so early." (Even the demons knew and understood "the time sequence" while Christians then, and now, do not.)

As a consequence, it is important in this context to realize that Satan and his demons are spirits (pneuma). In this state, they cannot die. But their minds can be changed – just like their hearts can be changed. It will not be impossible. It's in God's Plan.

Do you think that they are so strong-willed in their minds that the stronger Will of God cannot counteract their “individual selfish will?” Carefully consider that question. In short, whose will is stronger – that of the demons or that of God? If you say, God’s Will is stronger, then you are virtually admitting that God’s Will can bring Satan’s will “to heel.” So it is certain:

“...at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;...” (Philippians 2:10).

Will Satan and his demons be brought to this point of willing submission? Will they come to bow their knees (verse 10) and confess with their tongues (verse 11)?

It certainly looks that way – if you believe these texts are an accurate report of what is going to take place on behalf of God’s Will being stronger than any other “will” in the universe, which includes Satan.

It is also important for you to recognize that the word for “torment” here is “basanos” – which means “to refine to gold.” It could also be implied to the process where an individual came to see “The Truth” or “Repents.”

WHAT BURNS?

What burns the longest – the body, soul, or Spirit? Paul desired for The Church at Thessalonica to be fully preserved. Paul said:

“...the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ” (I Thessalonians 5:23).

It is not the body or the flesh that needs to be spared. That is only an “outer covering,” or “a garment.” Peter likened it to a Tabernacle (II Peter 1:13). You need to be “...clothed upon...” from above – or “...from heaven...” (II Corinthians 5:2-4). These texts deal with this very problem.

First of all, the body and flesh do not make you sin. It is the mind that operates from within the body of flesh. Secondly, it is something greater that needs to be burned in the fire to be purified. Is it the soul, Spirit, or what? It is not the body. That is only the wrapper of something more vital – and more subject to sin. This is something that is motivated by desire. Consider the great sin of Eve in The Garden. It was her desire that led her to commit that first sin.

Now for the crux. It is your Spirit or carnal heart which needs the most burning in order to remove “the dross” (Matthew 15:18-20). This represents The Fires of Purification. This is the death appointed, once, for all to die. It is The Spirit or heart and mind that must die or change. That is why everyone must Repent to be Saved.

Many people tend to say: “Well, he was just born that way.” They may also charge that, “It’s in your genes.” This may be true to a point, but with your individual mind, you can always make a choice about whether to

follow the weakness of your flesh, or not. That is what REPENTANCE is all about.

In The Lake of Fire, the body and the flesh are as wood, hay, and stubble. They burn up quickly. The pain of the body lasts only a very short time. Then, the body becomes as ashes under someone's feet. The body and flesh disappear quite quickly. Consider the rich man who was resurrected from hades, or the grave. He quickly REPENTED, and did not need to receive too many stripes.

THE VERY WICKED

Now, consider the very wicked. The extremely wicked ones will have the judgment where their bodies burn quickly. But it goes beyond that. Their individual consciousness must remain in The Fire or torment until The Spirit (pneuma) is changed. This is somewhat comparable to The Judgment placed upon the demons.

In other words, the extremely wicked will have Repented until their minds are pure. All that remains will be like fine gold that lasts forever. Now, a new body, a Spiritual body, is given to them (I Corinthians 15). This, also, means that death is "SWALLOWED UP IN VICTORY." These extreme, wicked people must become like little children, Babes in Christ.

Then, Christ will defeat all his enemies, along with death itself. Afterward, Christ gives The Kingdom over to God, so that God may be

“all and in all,” just as God was, in the beginning before He produced His Creation.

Since God has reproduced Himself (from all that God was, is, and will be), you will, now, see the end result. It will be God's entire creation that includes everything in Heaven, in earth, and even beneath the earth. All of this will be in The New Heaven and The New Earth. Furthermore, everything will be completely at Rest (God's Sabbath Rest). A “sabbatismos,” not a “sabbaton.” It will be An Eternal Rest, not just one day.

In Revelation 21:4, God wipes away all tears, sorrow, pain, and death. Then, The Father, The Son (Groom), The Bride (Chosen), The Witnesses (Israel and Judah), The Guests (Saved nations), and the new babes in-Christ – are all members of The Kingdom of God. In other words, ALL HAVE BEEN SAVED.

One exception remains. It concerns the babes in Christ. The following instructions are in The Book of Revelation:

“Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates [Israel] into the City” (Revelation 22:14).

Only The Bride, Israel (Gates – Witness), and The Guests (Saved Nations) can proceed into The New Jerusalem. This is where God, The Father, and His Son become The Temple within The City (Revelation 21:3, 22).

The excluded ones (without the city) are the wicked who were sent into The Lake of Fire. Now, these wicked ones have become “the new babes” in Christ. They are the children of Christ and His Bride, The Mother of Everyone. Since they are teachable, now, they will continue to grow in God’s Glory or Goodness.

THE NEW CHILDBIRTH

The new childbirth is found in Galatians 4, where New Jerusalem, which is mankind’s Mother, breaks out into a massive childbirth. This birthing period concerns all of those individuals who did not receive Salvation by means of Redemption. But, they will receive their Jubilee “release” when they pay off their debt obligation in The Lake of Fire. This will be down to “the last farthing.”

Remember, in Matthew 22 there are those at The Wedding Feast who will be “the few”. “**For many are called [to The Feast], but few are chosen [Saved]**” (Matthew 22:14). Only those who are written in The Lamb’s Book of Life (Marriage Registry) will be allowed to enter The City (The Wedding Feast).

Those who are excluded and outside the city (billions and billions) are “the babes in Christ” who must Spiritually mature in order to have God’s Ten Commandments written in their hearts.

All this must take place before they can enter New Jerusalem, and become a part of The Wedding Feast. By the way, it is important to notice that

The Wedding Feast never ends. Talk about one long party! God's Kingdom of Rest will last forever. Eternally, they will have access to The Tree of Life.

Remember, only Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden. Cain and Abel, their children, never were in The Garden, but only in The Land of Eden (Pleasantness), which is God's Kingdom. The Tree of Life was cut off to them just as it will be for "the babes in Christ" (in New Jerusalem).

Now, consider what must happen to these children of Christ and His Bride before they can enter The City in order to partake of The Tree of Life.

FINAL DESTINY

Revelation 22:1-2 reveals that A Great River from God's Throne goes throughout The New Earth. Furthermore, "the leaves" from The Tree of Life pour out for the healing of the nations. Remember, how The Saved Ones and these babes keep growing Spiritually. The River represents God's Holy Spirit (John 7:37-39). Therefore, the babes must Spiritually mature to the full stature of Christ, and their Father, God.

"And the Spirit and the bride [Mother] say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst [babes-guests] come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely" (Revelation 22:17).

The situation is that it is not The Father who is doing the calling – or Christ. But now, it is only The Bride's job (Mother) and The Holy Spirit's

job to see they are Spiritually nourishing (nursing) the new babes in Christ.

All will be Saved and continue to grow in God's Kingdom with all of your Father's riches forever. It never stops.

In verse 21, John was The Last Apostle alive to give The Words of Christ, about His true return. John ended his discourse with the words: **“The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all** [So God The Father can truly be “All and in All.”]. **A-men!**” So be it.

CHAPTER 22

SATAN SHALL BRUISE HIS HEEL

God removed Satan from his high estate, in God's Kingdom when he deceived Eve. It was Eve who convinced Adam to sin and both ate the forbidden fruit. Satan truly was God's adversary from the beginning of The Earthly Plan. So, God did limit Satan's freedom. This evil genius was now condemned to become an enemy of Adam and Eve's children throughout all the future ages. Can you imagine such a thing? This is a profound beginning to the Genesis story.

How was Satan going to defeat The Promised Seed, Jesus Christ? Just look at what the early portion of The Book of Genesis tells you:

“...I will put enmity between thee [the serpent] and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel” (Genesis 3:15).

The wound to the head would be much greater than the wound to the heel. Jesus was symbolically wounded in the heel, but Restored to Life, whereas

the devil/serpent was wounded in the head, which is much more serious. Paul commented on this by saying:

“...the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly...” (Romans 16:20).

The serpent’s poison is destroyed. He no longer deceives anyone.

In essence, God made it known to Satan, “From this point on, you are a snake. You are subtle and devious. Deep within yourself, you do not have any standards of quality. You look to externals.” Picture God thinking: “You may appear as a Cherub of Mine, but in reality you are only a snake. You will be deceptive, secretive, cunning, even captivating, and what’s more, you are poisonous.”

All those possibilities, and more, are contained within Satan’s Grand Design. You must realize that everything contained “within Satan’s head” is deadly. You could even say that, He is “filled with poison.” This affects everything he plans, says, and does. No wonder the “bruise” is to the head. This is similar in wording to the beast where: “**...one of his heads as it were wounded to death;...**” (Revelation 13:3). Of course, the devil or dragon is the power behind this nefarious creature (Revelation 13:2).

Satan is the god of the dead – just as you read: “**...him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;**” (Hebrews 2:14). Satan, The Devil only causes death. He is virtually “The Lord of The Dead.” Satan is

obviously the enemy of all humanity. This is readily apparent from the initial account given in Genesis 3:14-15.

SATAN'S SYSTEM

Since Satan is the enemy of all humanity, how could he control Adam and Eve's progeny? If Satan could not use his power to directly kill their children (God, of course, limited his authority), then he only had deceptive and cunning methods to use. He did this by means of appearing as "God's servant." But it was all a lie. Satan changes his appearance into a seemingly good individual. Notice:

"...Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light"

(II Corinthians 11:14).

Satan appears to be something he is not. He is the greatest of all deceivers (Revelation 12:9). He is deeply involved with misrepresentation. What you see is not what you get. You don't want to see what you will get – with Satan. Misrepresentation is a most vital part of Satan's ploy to deceive mankind. Consequently, humans have traded gold for dross, as Adam and Eve did.

Where does the problem lie? It was with the one who received "the bruised head." He would be the ultimate offender, who was chastised by the Most High God (Genesis 3:15). But there is another aspect. This concerns the one who received "the bruised heel" (Genesis 3:15). This symbolizes the death of Messiah. This is the underlying basis for the

prophesied battle between Christ and the antichrist.

In short, it was Satan's plan to first pick off Adam and Eve's children as the primary casualties because they were The Promised Seed. They are the ones who would turn from righteousness to obey Satan instead of God. The entire basis was trickery.

SATAN'S DECEPTION

When the first male children, Cain and Abel, were born to Adam and Eve, obviously Satan knew Cain was the firstborn. The firstborn male, as Christ, was designated as the one to make intercession on behalf of the family. Cain was the elder. So Cain was destined to become the one responsible for interceding for the entire family. In the Book of Hebrews, Paul said:

“For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts [Greek: offerings] and sacrifices for sins:” (Hebrews 5:1).

This is exactly what Cain and Abel did. They both made an offering (Hebrew: “gift”) to God. From other texts, only The High Priest could perform this rite. Satan knew God's Plan. So this worked well with Cain, who had a jealous and deceptive heart. As the firstborn, he was especially jealous of Abel, the second-born. Cain bitterly resented Abel because God

accepted Abel's Sacrifice – knowing Abel had a right heart (Genesis 4:1-6).

God knows everyone's heart. God told Cain that he had a carnal heart by his wanting to sin. God wanted Cain to master himself by repenting. Therefore, in God's conversation with Cain, God explained that if he did repent, he, then, would have been accepted.

Abel's offering (gift) was accepted. This was a type for The Promised Seed (Messiah). Abel was to be The First High Priest of Melchisedec who would offer Gifts for his lineage. This lineage would also bare the promised future Savior.

In Hebrews 5:10, the high priest is called or accepted by God, along with the offering made after The Order of Melchisedec. The Greek word for "order" carries the meaning of "succession." But Melchisedec has no beginning or ending. The term Melchisedec comes from two Hebrew words "melek" refers to "king," and "tesdeq" refers "to prosperity" and "wealth."

OFFICE OF MELCHISEDEC

Melchisedec is not a person. Melchisedec is an office. It denotes the elder person who is responsible for the lineage of The Promised Seed to come. This Promised Seed will Restore all things. The High Priest offers sacrificial Gifts that point to the fact that the genealogy comes through the High Priest "lineage." Who was the first elder? It was Abel. He was

accepted by God as the first elder who originated from Adam and Eve (Hebrews 11:2-4).

Under Moses, Aaron was the firstborn and high priest who offered Gifts and Sacrifices for himself and Israel, only. Being three years older than Moses, he served in the capacity of the firstborn. This example was to become a Witness of The Messiah – or The Seed to come.

After Jesus was Sacrificed for the sins of the world, He now sits in The Order of The Office of Melchisedec. As High Priest, Christ makes intercession for all the future sins of Christians who will Repent.

Satan stopped the seed of Cain as firstborn – and Abel was murdered. Therefore, Satan thought he had won the battle – with no seed available for the future (Genesis 4:9-10). But he was wrong. Seth was born as a replacement. Consequently, Eve said:

“...For God, said she, hath appointed me [reserved] another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew” (Genesis 4:25).

As a result of these actions, The Promised Seed could come through Seth. This meant that Seth would become High Priest after the succession or Order of Melchisedec. In this capacity, he would make offerings and Sacrifices that would point toward The Messiah (Genesis 4:26). Through Seth, Enos (his Firstborn son and descendant) called upon the name of God. This was the lineage of the original Church of God – or the “Called-Out Ones.”

SATAN DECEIVES CAIN'S GENEALOGY

When Cain went to the land of Nod (wandering without God), he built a pagan society. This was based upon what God had told him in Eden. He thought that he, as firstborn, was to be the high priest from whom The Promised Seed should come. God even marked him so no one would kill him (Genesis 4:15). Lamech, his great-great grandson, knew what Cain had said. So, when Lamech killed two people, he said he should be forgiven seventy times sevenfold (Genesis 4:24) – and he could still be The Promised Seed.

Under Cain's genealogy, the entire pagan priesthood was instituted. They had a reprobate mind, and God could not be with them as they invented their own way of doing things. They knew The Promised Seed (Christ) would be Sacrificed. So, on their own, they instituted human Sacrifice. Also, they had learned from Cain that they had to be repentant like little children. Instead, they offered little children to be burned – just as in The Lake of Fire.

Satan always twists The Truth. The result was that a world of many human religious systems would spring up. These systems were replete with kings and priests. This phenomena spread throughout the entire known world. By this means a partial knowledge of The Truth was passed on by Cain to his future generations. That is why the present world has been discovering its heritage and history – which has many beliefs and systems for pleasing its own gods.

Most early studies in paleontology show how the Sumarians, Aztecs, Incas, Hindus, and others – all have similar beliefs in common. This is a religious basket of confusion – otherwise known as “Babylon.”

God’s High Priest, Seth, made Sacrifices for others. Following this time period, Noah, Abraham, and others knew The Truth of God. This is because they called upon God – as they were in the capacity of God’s Church or Called-Out Ones.

Both Cain’s genealogy and Seth’s progeny multiplied until the sons of God (from Seth) saw the daughters of men (from Cain), intermingled and married them. Confusion (Babylon) prevailed. Finally only one man, Noah, was perfect in his generations.

**“...Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations,
and Noah walked with God”** (Genesis 6:9).

Therefore, only through Noah could the future Savior come. It looked like Satan was winning again. Or, at least that is what he thought. Only Noah was left as the comforter for mankind.

NOAH’S CHILDREN

After the flood, Noah and his family became the fountainhead for all the future children on this earth. Noah had three sons: Shem, Ham and Japheth.

Just before Noah died, he blessed his children and foretold their future.

He said Japheth's descendants would become the most populated. Because Ham was sexually involved with Noah while intoxicated, his descendants were to become servants of servants (Genesis 9:24-26).

Shem was destined to carry on the line of The Promised Seed. Furthermore, God would be Shem's God. This was most important. Shem was blessed and was the individual, called Melchisedec, who was The King of Peace and Prosperity. Through Shem, The Promised Seed would come. In the overall sense, all the basic three races came from Noah's children and their wives (Genesis 9:19-29).

In this process, Satan thought he had won the contest by having only one person, Noah, who was perfect in his generations. However, God determined Shem's line would continue to fulfill The Promise of Genesis 3:15. This was The Royal Priesthood that would carry "The Torch of Truth" throughout the world.

Once again, by deception, Satan mixed The Truth of God with human reason (paganism). This succeeded in bringing down the human race. God's Plan was to produce The Flood to cleanse the earth of humanity's evil thoughts and actions. Later, as the earth began to be repopulated, the inhabitants were all of one language – consequently they built The Tower of Babel as their human effort to please or appease God (Genesis 11:1-9).

Ham's great grandchild, Nimrod, was a great hunter and started his own religious system against God (Genesis 10:3-9). Then God observed the tendency of humanity to intermix with The Promised Seed. This caused

religious confusion once again by dividing the nations, and giving them diverse languages.

God's Plan would not be thwarted by Satan so quickly. This was just before the right time for The Promised Seed to be born. Babylon or confusion of God's Truth was delayed for the proper time. History from this point on continued with pagans or those who were not with God. Finally came God's Promised Covenant of The Seed. This was the time that Mary gave birth to the infant Jesus.

RETURN OF NOACHIAN DAYS

After Christ was crucified for every person's sins, Jesus, as The High Priest of The Order of Melchisedec, sits at the right hand of God, The Father. In this capacity, He makes intercession for you. Before His Resurrection, Jesus gave a prophecy concerning His second coming as King of Kings. His human birth and Life fulfilled the role of The Promised Seed as The High Priest, Melchisedec.

Christ's Apostles asked Jesus what would be the sign of His second coming (Matthew 24:3). A much-overlooked prophecy by Christ was His statement that when He would come the second time, the world would be like it was in Noah's day. That was a world in religious confusion, or Babylon (Matthew 24:38-39).

Much of the world believes that everything remains the same. They think that everything remains just like it was in the past. Peter said the same

thing in II Peter 3:2-6. He said that just as the earth was flooded so will it be at the end. Only this time, it would be purged by Fire. This is not a baptism but a purging.

Satan is doing exactly what he did in pre-flood times. The world is filled with diverse ideologies of religion. Even Christianity is split into thousands of differing groups. He allowed Babylon, which is the continual confusion of The Truth of God. Since Jesus, The Promised Seed, won the battle over Satan by using The Truth of God's Word, Satan no longer has access to God.

Now is Satan's time of wrath. He is bitterly angry because he knows his time is short. Now, he deceives the nations with vengeance knowing he will lose just like Cain. These are truly "the last days."

Jesus promises that when He returns, the world will be exactly as in Noah's time. Every thought will be evil – contrary to God's Word.

The Promised Seed has come to Restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11), Jesus is fulfilling that Promise to return humanity to Paradise – which is God's Rest (I Corinthians 15).

Satan, as God's adversary, is deceiving and manipulating humanity in every possible way. When did this great deception of Satan begin? The answer is in Matthew 4:1-4. It was right after Jesus had won the battle over Satan. Satan is depicted as a devouring lion (I Peter 5:8). What is Satan's plan? It is simply the same as when he fought Jesus – by using God's Word.

SATAN'S PLAN

Satan knows all about God's Plan. He was there in the beginning to help fulfill God's Purpose to have a Family Kingdom. That is why Satan employs every method for producing children who are opposed to God's system. How does Satan mislead humanity? He does it by means of human reason. This is the same process as in The Book of Judges where it states, **"...every man did that which was right in his own eyes"** (Judges 21:25). Also, compare:

"There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death" (Proverbs 14:12).

In this context, Satan plays right into human desires – just as he did with Eve. Satan uses The Scriptures against you – just as he did with Christ.

Often a person may think that Satan intervenes with Life's circumstances. No, he plays along with those who are unaware of this tactic. First and foremost, Satan must thwart or confuse The Word of God by focusing upon human reason. That is why there are so many translations of God's Word, especially The New Testament. Why is this? It is because they comprise the very Word of God and Christ.

Humans generally like to think Satan did it, just as Eve said. No, Satan is a deceiver. He makes The Truth seem to be wrong, and then he makes sense according to every person's desire. The focus is upon "the church of your choice."

No human group, denomination, etc. has all The Truth. The best any human can know is what God has revealed – and even that is only “in part” (I Corinthians 13:12).

Christ warned that many are called to His Church, and yet they can be deceived (Matthew 24:5 and Matthew 22:14).

Satan makes the very Truth of God's Word appear to be wrong, and then gives a logical human explanation to make it seem right. This is distortion. When did Satan start to deceive The Church of God? It was right after Jesus defeated him. Christ, just before His crucifixion, told Peter that Satan wanted to sift Peter as wheat, but Jesus prayed for him (Luke 22:31).

It isn't the people of the world that Satan is worried about, but those who are becoming Sons of God. Satan is at war with Christianity (Revelation 12:17). Satan is fighting against Eve's Promised Seed. Satan fights against God's Word because Jesus said: “We are to live ‘**by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**’” (Matthew 4:4).

FIGHTING THE EVIL ONE

How are Christians able to fight against Satan? It is living by every Word of God in The Holy Bible. Christians cannot trust any man. Paul said that every man's work will be tested – including Paul's own work. Paul said that whether it was Peter, Apollos, or Paul himself, their work would be tried – whether of gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or stubble.

Every man's work will be tested. But how? It will be by Fire (I Corinthians 3:3-15).

What is a Christian's defense? It is to be constantly studying The Bible like The Bereans, "to see if these things be so" (Acts 17:11).

Satan is deceiving the entire religious community. Satan incorporates "human ideas" and "human systems" – which God's Word never approved. As Paul said, these actions "seem to be good things to do" in order to please God. Paul called it "will worship." These teachers would deny themselves, believing it would please God (Colossians 2:23).

Before Jesus returns, religion will be mixed with Satan's "system of Babylon," which is nothing but confusion (See: I Corinthians 14:33). There are hundreds, thousands, millions, and billions of people who believe God accepts their human attempts to please Him. This is not a truthful reality.

Carefully study the next two chapters of **God's Work** so you can see how Satan started deceiving by means of distorting The Truth of God. This began right from the opening celebrations on The Day of Pentecost. This was the time for the birth of The Church of God. Satan will continue to distort The Truth until the very return of Jesus, The Christ. The entire world will religiously follow Satan – and all the while believing they are following Christ.

CHAPTER 23

THE GREAT FALLING AWAY

Why was it necessary for The New Testament Books to become part of The Bible? The Old Testament prophecies told about The Messiah and God's Purpose for Jesus Christ. Much of The Apostles' teachings and doctrines came from The Old Testament, which they constantly quoted. For twenty years, The New Testament Church relied on The Old Testament as being God's Word. Why was it necessary to add The New Testament Books to the established Scriptures? You will find The Truth to be astounding!

Luke wrote his Gospel, in the early fifties A.D., just as most of the other Gospels were written with the exception of The Gospel of John. The Book of John was written about forty years later (About 95 A.D.). This late date can be established for a very good reason.

Luke said he wrote his Gospel to Theophilus, an important person at that time, being a fellow-Christian. Luke explained to Theophilus (Luke 1:4) why he was writing his account of The Gospel declaring the following:

“That thou mightest know the certainty of those things,

wherein thou hast been instructed.”

Luke explained that he had perfect understanding with everything that happened during Christ’s human ministry (Luke 1:4). Luke reaffirmed what Theophilus had been taught, and that it was indeed “The Absolute Truth.”

What was the problem? Theophilus and the other Christians were being told something which was different from The Truth which originally had been taught.

Some were twisting The Truth of The Teachings of The Apostles. This was occurring as early as 50 A.D. Who were these teachers and what was this new controversial doctrine being brought into The Church? The fact is, there were false teachings being taught about Jesus Christ, The Savior.

THE LAST DAYS

Of all The Epistles written, the first contained the general instructions given to The Thessalonians. The two Thessalonian Epistles were written between 51 and 52 A.D. Why were they composed? Simply, because some were teaching the notion that The Resurrection was past, and/or Christ was going to return at any moment. False brethren were creeping in and denying the teachings of The True Apostles. Paul had to write these letters to clarify the cause of the problem.

Paul didn’t want anything, or anyone, to fool or confuse them concerning The Return of Christ. He stated that some instruction had come to them

“as if” this information came directly from The Apostles (II Thessalonians 2:1-2). In this context, it is important to realize that first, and foremost, before Christ returns, there must be A Great Falling Away from The Truth of Christianity (II Thessalonians 2:3).

There is another event tied directly to this. It concerns The Man of Sin who must be revealed. These are two very clear instructions given by Paul about what must happen before Jesus returns.

The trouble with most people today – they do not understand when This Great Falling Away actually occurred. It would be quite understandable for some to think The Falling Away doesn't take place until just before The Return of Christ. But that is not the subject Paul is teaching. He is explaining something else to you.

In II Thessalonians 2:7, Paul states how The Mystery of Iniquity was already taking effect. What is this Mystery of Iniquity (Sin)? It concerns The Man of Sin who opposes all that is of God – and how Christians are supposed to worship God (verse 4). In other words, all of God's Truth, which The Apostles had been teaching, was purposely altered and changed.

In this atmosphere, The Truth of Christ would slowly disappear. This would include the ideas circulating, then, that Jesus was not human – or did not even come as a human being in the flesh. This was one of the major teachings of the anti-Christ movement. Significant in all of this is that Paul said these “false teachings” were already being taught at the very

time The Letter to The Thessalonians was being written.

It is vital to realize that Paul had to write this epistle in order to protect “True Christians” from being duped causing them to start to fall away. The implications are that “The Great Falling Away” had already begun. Paul had to write that critical letter to The Thessalonians so Christians, at that time, and during this very time, would not be deceived or duped.

JOHN’S WARNING

The Apostle John wrote the same important warning as Paul did to The Thessalonians. Remember, there were two primary events that had to occur before Christ’s return:

1. A GREAT FALLING AWAY FROM THE TRUTH; and
2. THE MAN OF SIN or ANTI-CHRIST WOULD BE REVEALED.

John wrote his Epistle nearly forty years after this time period in about 90-95 A.D. But True Christians had already been affected and were falling away only 40 years after Jesus ascended into heaven. Why was this?

John explains all this in I John 2:18-19. In his day (95 A.D.), John states it was already “the last time.” In the Greek language, the “last time,” is the “end time,” and later it is applied to “The Return of Christ.” All that was needed was for “the man of sin” or “the anti-christ” to be revealed. Then Christ would come shortly after that, to defeat this enemy completely under Satan’s control. Until all of this occurs, JESUS WILL NOT RETURN.

Paul gives one more condition before Christ's return. In Romans 11:25, he describes how "the end time" will not happen until the fullness of The Gentiles comes in. The fullness of The Gentiles refers to the time when God is finished calling all The Gentiles to The Truth.

No one but God, The Father, knows that time. This applies to everyone, including Jesus, Himself (Acts 1:6-7). The decision about when Jesus is to come again is completely within the Power of God, The Father. It is amazing that anti-christs were already appearing and swaying True Christians in John's day (verse 18). John said these days were "the last days" or "the end time" – why?

Those days and these "days" were "the beginning of the last days" because Christians were falling away from The Truth and the anti-christs were already doing their deceiving in John's time. ONLY TWO MORE EVENTS MUST TAKE PLACE FOR CHRIST TO RETURN. They are as follows:

1. This man of sin, the anti-christ, must be revealed;
2. All The Gentiles that God intends to call to The Church, must understand The Truth.

How long will this take?

WHEN CHRIST RETURNS

Jesus cannot return until this "Man of Sin" is revealed or exposed, and the

end of time for calling The Gentiles is completed. Christ absolutely will not return until these two events occur first.

Paul states how this Mystery of Iniquity was taking place in 50 A.D. And, this Falling Away from The Truth will continue in Christianity until God allows this “Man of Sin” to be revealed – and the number of all “the called-out” Gentiles will be complete.

Then, Christ will come and DESTROY this “Man of Sin” which concerns The Mystery of Iniquity (II Thessalonians 2:7-9). The great deception of Satan is to make Christians think this “Falling Away” happens just before Christ returns. This is not so! It happened much earlier. Very few realize this vital fact.

These factors show how The Falling Away From The Truth already started in approximately 50 A.D. It only increased momentum after that. John declares how “the anti-Christ” had already started to appear in his time. It is a mistake for Christian people to tie these end-time conditions with current events – and then assume this phenomenon occurs rapidly – or even within the same-time period.

Consider the overall time perspective. Fully two thousand years have passed since those “last days” started, and still Jesus has not returned. Why is this? It is because “the last days” began historically near the time of “the genesis” of The New Testament Church.

Thousands of years would transpire until the last two conditions will take place:

1. "The Man of Sin" is revealed, and
2. "The Completion of all Gentiles who are to be called" before Christ returns.

Jesus will not return until God, The Father decides that everything He Purposed is done or completed. Then Christ will return.

Many have the notion that before Christ returns there must be "A Great Falling Away." Some Christians do not understand the basis for showing how the "Falling Away" actually occurred 40 years after Christ ascended and has continued to this very day. This is one of the greatest of Satan's "major deceptions" – by lying to mankind. Do not be satisfied with some counterfeit form of The Truth; search out True Christianity – The Real Truth of God.

PETER KNEW CHRIST'S RETURN

The Great Falling Away started around 50 A.D. All The Apostles, who were with Jesus, including Paul, were getting older. Some were already dead, and James died in 62 A.D. Now the remaining Apostles recognized that their time to die was getting closer. Only The Apostle John was allowed to live longer than the rest – as Christ foretold (John 21:23).

The Apostles who were still alive at that time were aware how the evil forces of the anti-christ were already diligently at work in The Church. The major motivation of The Apostles was to keep True Christians

obeying The Truth as they had been taught (I Thessalonians 4:1, II Peter 1:10-15, I John 4:1, Jude 3, etc.).

In fact, The Apostle Peter knew that The Return of Christ could be thousands of years away. Notice what Peter said in II Peter 3:1-2. He wrote this Epistle to stir up the minds of True Christians, and to bring their remembrance to the instruction given by The Holy Prophets and The Apostles of Christ's Day.

Peter discussed the last days. He had already proved how The New Testament Church was “in the last days,” and that scoffers would be in The Church walking after their own lusts. The Church was used as a career or a salaried job for them. It was a nefarious business – to generate “filthy lucre.” These false prophets began to ask: “Where is Jesus?” “He isn't going to return soon because everything is the same as when their forefathers were alive” (II Peter 3:4-5).

After explaining the events, which were to take place when Jesus returned and The New Heaven and The New Earth would begin (II Peter 3:6-7), Peter makes an amazing statement:

“⁸But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.”

Peter tells how these events could be a long time in the future. This is the 21st century, nearly 2,000 years later from the time when Peter stated

(about 60-66 A.D.), that Christ's return could be thousands of years away. Why?

Peter explains that God is extremely patient, and will not have anyone perish (verse 9). God will not allow Jesus to return until all The Gentiles are called to The Truth. God will permit no one to perish even if it involves thousands of years for His Son to return. Peter definitely knew that Christ's return was a long way off.

What was important to Peter and the remaining Apostles, was for you and all True Christians to understand that this Falling Away had already begun in The Church back at The Apostles' time. No one should be deceived – especially The Truly Repentant and Spiritually Growing Christians.

START OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

Continuing with this theme, Peter acknowledged the need for The New Testament becoming part of The Bible. In II Peter 3:14-19, Peter wanted The True Christians to know what was happening in The Church, and the newly emerging process of the “falling away.” He wanted Christians to be diligent in keeping The True Faith. He hoped that they would be found to be without spot and blameless when Jesus returned.

Peter didn't want The Christians to worry about the return of Christ. In the overall sense, it is God's Will to Save “EVERYONE” (I Timothy 2:4). Peter explains that Paul, in his epistles, was reporting the same thing – even though Paul's letters were “hard” to be understood. Now listen to

Peter's startling statement even though **"...in all his [Paul's] epistles ...in which are some things hard to be understood, which ...they [his letters] do also the other Scriptures..."** (II Peter 3:16).

Peter plainly explains how Paul's letters should be considered on the same level as The Old Testament. This is "The Genesis" of The New Testament becoming part of The Bible. Peter, Paul, and John also, finalized The New Testament as part of God's Word - The Bible.

PAUL ALSO KNEW

In II Timothy 4:3-13, Paul knew he had finished the fight, and was now ready to die. He warned Timothy of all the false teachers and how the time was near when Christians would fall away. So Timothy should always continue preaching The Truth, just as Peter admonished in his own Epistles. Then Paul, in closing, makes a very unusual request. Paul told Timothy, to make sure he brings the "parchments" (verse 13).

In the Greek, the word for "parchments" is "membrana" or "sheepskin" (Strong's #3200). Letters or epistles were written on these sheepskins or parchments. Just as Peter felt he was going to die, Paul, also, believed his time was near, and wanted his letters to be included with Peter's letters.

Peter said that Paul's Epistles were "Scripture." In I Timothy 3:16, Paul states that all Scripture is inspired by God. So Paul, Peter, John, and all the other writings are Scriptures, which were inspired by God. The New Testament, by God's Holy Spirit inspiring his ministers, completed THE FULL BIBLE – The Old and New Testaments.

Why did The Apostles feel it was necessary to make The New Testament part of God's Word? Perhaps by not realizing God's Plan for The New Testament, they felt there was overwhelming evidence that The Church was under attack by false prophets. This was actually the beginning of "The Great Falling Away From The Truth" that had started in 50 A.D.

The Apostles, being elderly and dying, wanted to assure future generations that The Truth of Christianity would be available to The Churches of their own day and The Churches throughout the ages. Since Peter believed that Christ's return could be thousands of years away, The Apostles wanted to guarantee that future Christians would have a very accurate source of Truth as this "Falling Away" would continue until the very Return of Christ.

In short, this was in God's "overall" Plan. So, "The Falling Away From The Truth," or "The Man of Sin" must be revealed. Besides, God must then finish calling all The Gentiles to The Truth. Until all these events take place, Christ will not return.

Therefore, it was necessary to make The New Testament a part of The Complete Bible in order to keep True Christians in The Faith. Then, all future Christians could be certain that God had given them a real source of Truth – and not the human ideas, which many of "today's" Christians follow, which are concepts based only on human reasoning and ideas. True Christians have The Old and New Testaments to know The Truth and keep THE FAITH.

CHAPTER 24

WHY THE BOOK OF REVELATION?

“Revelation” is that mysterious Book! And does anyone really understand it? As the last Book in The Bible, many ask if it is fact or fiction? This Book is in The Bible for a specific reason. II Timothy 3:16 said that every part of God’s Word is inspired by God. Therefore, Revelation is, indeed, inspired. As a consequence, it has a significant Purpose. This is why The Apostle John included it as a part of the totality of God’s Word. You may ask: “Why was Revelation written?”

IN THE BEGINNING

The birth of The New Testament Church started on The Day of Pentecost after Jesus went to sit on The Right Hand of God, The Father, as The High Priest and Savior. Three thousand people were baptized on that Pentecost.

Not too long afterward, The Church had five thousand members just counting the men (Acts 4:4). At this time all these individuals were Jews.

The Gentiles didn't come into The Church until Peter opened the door to God's Kingdom to Cornelius, who was "the first" Gentile – a Roman centurion soldier.

Persecution of any kind concerned Jesus, The Messiah. The resistance was by The Pharisees and Sadducees. In this atmosphere, The Apostles and other Jewish Christians went into The Temple to worship God. Christianity, at this point, was considered to be a part of the Jewish "faith." In fact, they were looked upon as a "Jewish sect."

Real trouble within The Church started when God revealed how The Gentiles were to become a part of The Church. After that, circumcision and the keeping of The Law became a problem in question. Paul wrote the entire Epistle of Galatians to try and keep The Gentiles from following The Works of The Law.

THE FIRST 20 YEARS

There had not been much falling away from The Church during the first twenty years. Persecution was mainly from The Pharisees who believed in Christ, but insisted that The Gentiles should, also, be circumcised. The reason circumcision was so important, along with The Abrahamic Covenant, was because The Temple was still there, and no one could enter The Temple unless he was circumcised.

Without acceptance in The Temple, a sincere person could not keep The

Law of Moses, especially The Holy Days. Therefore, circumcision was a serious problem for The Gentile Christians (Acts 15:1).

Seventeen years after Paul's conversion, the problem of circumcision and the keeping of God's Law by The Gentiles became a problem for The Church. It became so important that a conference was held in Jerusalem with The Apostles and The Jerusalem Church. In Acts 15:5, The Pharisees, who believed in Jesus, insisted The Gentiles had to be circumcised and had to keep The Law of Moses.

Eventually, after much discussion, they realized The Gentiles received God's Holy Spirit WITHOUT CIRCUMCISION AND WITHOUT KEEPING GOD'S LAW (Acts 15:24).

As long as The Temple existed, and The Shekinah (God's Glory) was still present, the Jewish Christians obeyed The Works of The Law until The Temple was destroyed in 70 A. D. This ended The Old Covenant when God's Presence ended (Hebrews 8:13). Now only The New Covenant applied to all Christians, Jew and Gentile. There was no difference between the two.

Church history brings you past 50 A.D. when the anti-christ "teachings" started to cause a division in The Church. With the fall of The Temple in 70 A.D. under Titus, all Jews were finally expelled from Jerusalem. The Apostles Paul and Peter, and most of the other Apostles were dead, and many false prophets entered The Christian Churches as Paul prophesied in

Acts 20:29-31. Paul pleaded for them not to cause a split in The Churches.

In fact, after 70 A.D., The Falling Away From The Church was so bad that Jude, Christ's other half brother, had to write an entire epistle about it.

JUDE'S WARNING

“Jude” is the name of the Book that appears before Revelation. It was written just before the fall of The Temple in 70 A.D. The Gnostics and Antinomians were effectively penetrating The True Churches of God. The Gnostics believed in the mystic system of attempting to get Salvation (which were The Babylonian Mysteries). The Antinomians believed grace meant you could sin all you wanted. Between these two influences, many were lured, and fell away from The True Gospel.

In Jude 3, he warned Christians to earnestly contend for The Faith which was once delivered to them. Jude states that men crept in and started to teach Christ was not Christ (Gnostics) and grace (Antinomians) allowed lasciviousness or sin (verse 4). These two systems of anti-christ penetrated The Church. They were motivated by four sinful acts.

1. Homosexuality. This was the reason Sodom and Gomorrah was a type of hell-fire.
2. Having no respect for authority – and constantly speaking evil of good people like The True Apostles (Jude 3:6-7).

3. Desire to control The Church and going further to make a business out of it. This was for “filthy lucre’s sake.”
4. They were even willing to murder to keep controlling The Churches (verse 7).

The reality is True Christianity, after 70 A.D., was in serious trouble. Wolves crept into The Churches to pry them away from The Truth of Christ. As the original Apostles were dying, the attacks to control The Christian Churches increased; further denying God’s Apostles – and finally, Christ, Himself.

By the end of the first century, most local Christian Churches no longer held to The Faith “once delivered.” By 90 A.D. only John, as an original Apostle, was left alive. It was up to John to finalize and complete The New Testament to contend for The Faith originally delivered to True Christians.

It was at this point John completed his Gospel, as well as his Epistles. Finally The Book of Revelation was written as a warning about The Great Falling Away.

In II John 7, The Apostle warned that many (not a few) deceivers would enter The Church. These are all a type of anti-christ. They denied that Jesus was ever human. In III John 4, The Apostle repeated that no joy was greater for Him than to know His Children still walked in The Truth. Diotrephes was actually forbidding True Christians from attending Church (verse 9).

It was a great problem, and John was the only original Apostle left to help the remaining Faithful Christians keep God's Truth, His Word.

The Book of Revelation was written as a direct prophecy to The Apostle John as a true account concerning the return of Jesus Christ. There were those who were seriously falsifying how Jesus would return to establish God's Kingdom. Christ revealed The Truth to John, who, in vision, remained alive until he witnessed The Return of Christ on The Isle of Palmos.

The false preachings by false preachers in The Christian Churches included: 1. Jesus didn't come in the flesh – was never human. 2. Some said The Resurrection was already past, and God's Kingdom would be established on the earth by The Church.

To counter, Christ revealed The Truth of the prophecy. The Book of Revelation relates His real Second Return.

Even the seven churches mentioned in Revelation, which Christ regarded as His, were already corrupted with false teaching. Only The Philadelphian Church was true to Christ. Read Revelation 2 and 3 and see God's Churches were already infested with pagan beliefs or anti-christ teachings. Revelation was written as part of The Bible to tell The Truth of Christ's return. Real Christians would not be deceived about God's Kingdom and Christ's return because The Book of Revelation tells The Truth of God's Kingdom and Christ's return.

SUMMARY

In this context, it is important to realize that God's Work has been spelled out in these 22 chapters of Revelation. It is necessary for every sincere individual to carefully consider the facts presented here – and the implications for you. The inspired New Testament had to be added to The Bible to warn Christians of The True Faith as taught by Jesus. Too many current teachings have been corrupted with pagan and other false teachings concerning true Christianity. Each dedicated Christian should constantly study God's Word and not be deceived by satan's deceptive anti-christ teachings.